

Robinson Crusoe as described Page 90. to front y Tale.



Robinson Crusoe as described Page 90. to front y Tale.

THE

ежежежежежежежежежежеже

LIFE

AND MOST SURPRISING

ADVENTURES

OF

Robinson Crusoe, k.

of YORK, MARINER,

Who lived eight and twenty years in an uninhabited island on the coast of America, near the mouth of the great river Oroonoque.

With an account of his deliverance thence, and his after furprifing adventures.

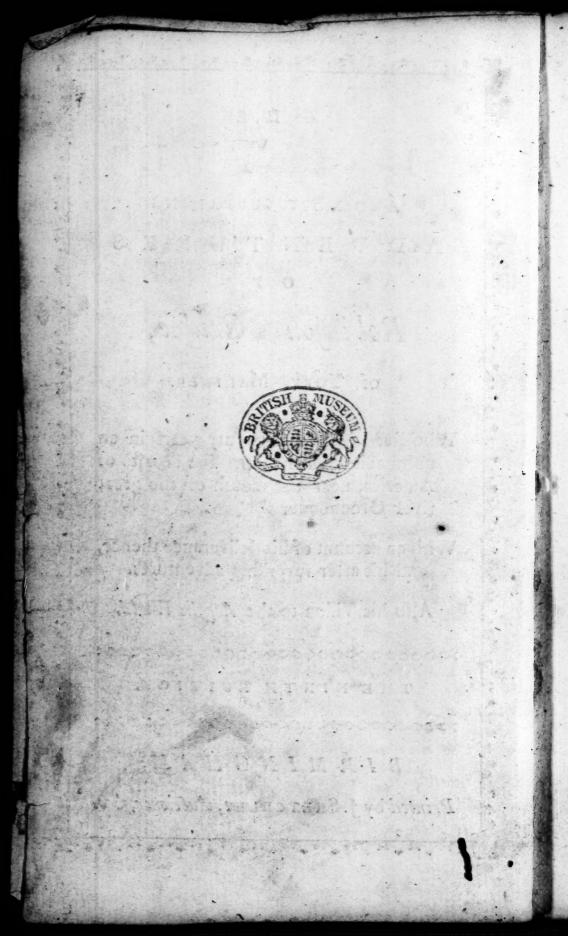
Also his Vision to the Angelic World.

THENINTH EDITION.

BIRMINGHAM:

Printed by J. SKETCHLEY, Auctioner, &c.

A MANAGORIAN MANAGORIA





THE

LIFE and ADVENTURES

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

Was born at York, in the year 1632, of a reputable family. My father was a native of Bremen, who by merchandizing at Hull for fome time gained a very plentiful fortune.

He married my mother at York, who received her first breath in that country: and as her maiden name was Robinson, I was called Robinson Kreutznaer; which not being eafily pronounced in the English tongue, we are commonly known by the name of Crusoe.

· I was the youngest of three brothers. The eldest was a lieutenant-colonel in Lockhart's regiment, but flain by the Spaniards: what became of

the other, I could never learn.

No charge nor pains were wanting in my education, My father defigned me for the law; yet nothing would ferve me, but I must go to sea,

both

both against the will of my father, the tears of my mother, and the intreaties of friends, One morning my father expostulated very warmly with me. What reason says he, have you to leave your native country, where there must be a more certain prospect of content and happiness, than to enter into a wandering condition of uneafiness and uncertainty? He recommended to me Agur's with, Neither to desire poverty nor riches; and that a middle state of life was the most happy; that the high towering thoughts of raising our condition by wandering abroad, were furrounded with mifery and danger, and often ended with confusion and disappointment. I intreat you, nay I command you, (fays he), to defift from these intentions. Consider your eldest brother, who laid down his life for his honour, or rather lost it for his disobedience to my will. If you will go, added he, my prayers shall however be offered for your prefervation; but a time may come, when, defolate, oppressed, or forsaken, you may wish you had taken your poor despised father's counfel.—He pronounced these words with such a moving and paternal eloquence, while floods of tears ran down his aged cheeks, that it feemed to stem the torrent of my refolutions. But this foon wore off, and a little after I informed my mother that I could not fettle to any business, my resolutions were so strong to see the world; and begged she would gain my father's confent only to go one voyage; which if it did not prove prosperous, I would never attempt a fecond. But my desire was as vain as my folly in asking. My mother paffionately

passionately expressed her dislike of this proposal, telling me, That as she saw I was bent upon my own destruction, contrary to their will and my duty, she would say no more, but leave me to myself to do

what soever I pleased.

I was then, I think, nineteen years old, when one time being at Hull, I met a schoolfellow of mine, going along with his father, who was mafter of a ship to London; and acquainting him with my wandering defires, he affured me of a free passage, and a plentiful share of what was necesfary. Thus without imploring a bleffing, or taking farewell of my parents, I took shipping on the first of September 1651. We set sail foon after; and our thip had scarce left the Humber astern, when there arose so violent a storm, that, being extreamly fea-fick, I concluded the judgments of God deservedly followed me for my disobedience to my dear parents. It was then I called to mind the good advice of my father; how easy and comfortable was a middle state of life; and I firmly resolved, if it pleased God to set me on dry land once more, I would return to my parents, implore their forgiveness, and bid a final adieu to my wandering inclinations.

Such were my thoughts while the storm continued; but these good resolutions decreased with the danger; more especially, when my companion came to me, clapping me on the shoulder: What, Bob! said he, sure you was not frightened last night with scarce a cup-full of wind?——And do you, cry'd I, call such a violent storm a cup-full of

A 2

wind,

wind, A storm, you fool you, said he this is nothing; a good ship and sea-room always basses such a foolish squawl of wind as that: But you're a freshwater sailor: Come, boy, turn out, see what sine weather we have now, and a good bowl of punch will drown all your past sorrows. In short, the punch was made, I was drunk, and in one night's time drowned both my repentance and my good resolutions, forgetting entirely the vows and promises I made in my distress: and whenever any reslections would return on me, what by company and what by drinking, I soon mastered those sits, as I deridingly called them. But this only made way for another trial, whereby I could not but see how much I was beholden to kind providence.

Upon the fixth day we came to an anchor in Harwich road, where we lay wind-bound with some Newcastle ships; and there being good anchorage, and our cables sound, the seamen forgot their late toil and danger, and spent the time as merry as if they had been on shore. But on the eighth day there arose a brisk gale of wind, which prevented our tiding it up the river, and still increasing, our ship rode forecastle in, and shipped

feveral large feas.

It was not long before horror feized the feamen themselves, and I heard the master express this melancholy ejaculation, Lord, have mercy upon us, we shall be all lest and undone! For my part, sick unto death, I kept my cabin, till the universal and terribly dreadful apprehensions of our speedy fate made me get upon deck: and there I was affrighted indeed. The sea went mountains high: I could

fee nothing but distress around us; two ships had cut their masts on board, and another was foundered: two more that had lost their anchors, were forced out to the mercy of the ocean; and to save our lives, we were forced to cut our fore-

mast and mainmast quite away.

Who is there so ignorant as not to judge of my dreadful condition; I was but a fresh-water sailor, and therefore it seemed more terrible. Our ship was very good, but over-loaded; which made the sailors often cry out, She would founder: Words I was then ignorant of! All this while the storm continuing, and rather increasing, the master and the more sober part of his men went to prayers, expecting death every moment. In the middle of the night, one cried out, We had sprung a leak; another, That there was four foot water in the hold. I was just ready to expire with fear, when immediately all hands were called to the pump; and the men forced me also in that extremity to share with them in their labour.

While thus employed, the master espying some light colliers, fired a gun as a signal of distress; and I not understanding what it meant, and thinking that either the ship broke, or some dreadful thing happened, fell into a swoon. Even in that common condition of wo, nobody minded me, excepting to thrust me aside with their feet, thinking me dead, and it was a great while before I

recovered.

Happy it was for us, when upon the figual given, they ventured out their boat to fave our lives. All our pumping had been in vain, and A 2

vain had all our attempts been, had they not come to our ships side, and our men cast them a rope over the stern with a buoy to it, which after great labour they got hold of, and we haling . them to us, got into their boat, and left our ship, which we perceived fink within less than a quarter of an hour; and thus I learnt what was meant by Foundering at fea. And now the men incessantly laboured to recover their own ship, but the fea ran fo high, and the wind blew fo. hard, that they thought it convenient to hale within shore; which with great difficulty and danger at last we happily effected, landing at a place called Cromer, not far from Winterton light-house; from whence we all walked to Yarmonth, where, as objects of pity, many good people furnished us with necessaries to carry us either to Hull or London.

Strange, that after all this, like the prodigal son, I did not return to my father; who, hearing of the ship's calamity, for a long time thought me intombed in the deep. No doubt but I should have shared in his fatted calf, as the scripture expresses it: but my ill sate still pushed me on, in spite of the powerful convictions of reason and conscience.

When we had been at Yarmouth three days, I met my old companion, who had given me the intitation to go abroad along with his father. His behaviour and speech was altered, and in a melancholy manner asked me how I did, telling his father who I was, and how I had made this voyage for a trial only to proceed farther abroad. Upon which the old gentleman turning to me gravely,

faid, Young man, you ought never to go to fea any more, but to take this for a certain sign that you will never prosper in a seafaring condition. Sir, answered I, will you take the same resolution? It is a different case, said he, it is my calling, and consequently my duty; but as you have made this voyage for a tryal, you see what ill success heaven has set before your eyes; and perhaps our miseries have been on your account, like Jonah in the ship of Tarshish. But pray, what are you, and on what account did you go to sea? Upon which I very freely declared my whole story; at the end of which he made this exclamation. Ye sacred powers! what had I committed, that such a wretch should enter into my ship, to heap upon me such a deluge of miseries! But soon recollecting his passions, Young man, said he, if you do not go back, depend upon it, where-ever you go, you will meet with disasters and disappointments till your father's words are fulfilled upon you. And so we parted.

I thought at first to return home; but shame opposed that good motion, as thinking I should be laughed at by my neighbours and acquaintance. So strange is the nature of youth, who are not ashamed to sin, but yet ashamed to repent; and so far from being ashamed of those actions for which they may be accounted fools, they think it folly to return to their duty, which is the principal mark of wisdom. In short, I travelled up to London, resolving upon a voyage; and a voyage I soon heard of, by my acquaintance with a captain who took a fancy to me, to go to the coast of Guinea. Having some money, and appearing like a gentle-

man,

man, I went on board not as a common failor or foremast man; nay, the commander agreed I should go that voyage with him without any expence; that I should be his mess-mate and companion; and I was very welcome to carry any thing with me, and make the best merchandise I could.

I bleffed my happy fortune, and humbly thanked my captain for this offer; and acquainting my friends in Yorkshire, forty pounds were sent me, the greatest part of which my dear father and mother contributed to; with which I bought toys and trifles, as the captain directed me. My captain also learned me navigation how to keep an account of the ship's course, take an observation, and led me into the knowledge of feveral useful branches of the mathematics. And indeed this voyage made me both a failor and a merchant; for I brought home 5 pounds 9 ounces of gold dust for my adventure, which produced at my return to London, almost three hundred pounds. But, in this voyage, I was extremely fick, being thrown into a violent calenture through excessive heat, trading upon the coast from the latitude of fifteen degrees north, even to the line itself.

But alas! my dear friend the captain foon departed this life after his arrival. This was a fensible grief to me; yet I resolved to go another voyage with his mate, who had now got command of the ship. This proved a very unsuccessful one; for though I did not carry quite 1001. of my late acquired wealth, so that I had 2001. left, which I reposed with the captain's widow, who was an shonest

honest gentlewoman, yet my misfortunes in this unhappy voyage were very great. For our ship failing towards the Canary islands, we were chased by a Sallee rover; and in spite of all the haste we could make, by crouding as much canvass as our yards would fpread, or masts carry, the pirate gained upon us, fo that we prepared ourselves to fight. They had 18 guns, and we had but 12. About three in the afternoon, there was a desperate engagement, wherein many were killed and wounded on both fides; but finding ourselves overpowered with numbers, our ship disabled, and ourselves too impotent to have the least hopes of fuccess, we were forced to surrender, and accordingly were all carried prisoners into the port of Sallee Our men were fent to the emperor's court to be fold there; but the pirate captain taking notice of me, kept me to-be his own flave.

In this condition I thought myfelf the most miferable creature on earth, and the prophecy of my father came afresh into my thoughts. However, my condition was better than I thought it to be, as will foon appear. Some hopes indeed I had, that my new patron would go to fea again, where he might be taken by a Spanish or Portuguese man of war, and then I should be set at liberty. But in this I was mistaken; for he never took me with him, but left me to look after his little garden, and do the drudgery of his house; and when he returned from sca, would make me lie in the cabin, and look after the ship. I had no one that I could communicate my thoughts to, which were continually meditating my escape; no Englishman, Irishman,

Irishman, or Scotsman here, but myself; and for two years I could see nothing practicable, but only

pleafed myfelf with the imagination.

After some length of time, my patron, as I found, grew so poor, that he could not sit out his ship as usual: and then he used constantly once or twice a week, if the weather was fair, to go out a-sishing, taking me and a young Moresco boy to row the boat; and so much pleased was he with my dexterity in catching the sish, that he would often send me with a Moor, who was one of his kinsmen, and the Moresco youth, to catch a dish of sish for him.

One morning, as we were at the sport, there arose fuch a thick fog, that we lost fight of the shore: and rowing we knew not which way, we laboured all the night, and in the morning found ourfelves in the ocean, two leagues from land. However, we attained there at length, and made the greater hafte, because our stomachs were exceeding sharp and hungry. In order to prevent fuch difasters for the future, my patron ordered a carpenter to build a little state-room or cabin in the middle of the long boat, with a place behind it to steer and hale home the main-sheet, with other conveniences to keep him from the weather, as also lockers to put in all manner of provisions, with a handsome shoulder of mutton fail, gibing over the cabin.

In this he frequently took us out a-fishing; and one time inviting two or three persons of distinction to go with him, made provision extraordinary, providing also three susees with powder and shot, that

that they might have fome sport at fowling along the sea-coast. The next morning the boat was made clean, her ancient and pendants out, and every thing ready; but their minds altering, my patron ordered us to go a sishing, for that his guests would certainly sup with him that night.

And now I began to think of my deliverance indeed. In order to this I perfuaded the Moor to get some provisions on board, as not daring to meddle with our patron's; and he taking my advice, we stored ourselves with Rusk biskets, and three jars of water. Besides, I privately conveyed into the boat a bottle of brandy, fome twine, thread, a hammer, hatchet, and a faw; and in particular fome bees wax, which was a great coinfort to me, and ferved to make candles. I then perfuaded Muley (for fo was the Moor called) to procure some powder and shot, pretending to kill Sea-Curlieus, which he innocently and readily agreed to. In short, being provided with all things necessary, we failed out, resolving for my own part: to make my escape though it should cost me my life.

When we had passed the castle, we fell to sishing; but though I knew there was a bite, I dissembled the matter, in order to put further out to sea. Accordingly we ran a league further; when giving the boy the helm, and pretending to stoop for something, I seized Muley by surprise, and threw him overboard. As he was an excellent swimmer, he soon arose, and made towards the boat; upon which I took out a susee, and presented it at him: Muley, said I, I never yet designed to do you any harm, and seek nothing now

but my redemption. I know you are able enough to fwim to shore, and save your life; but if you are resolved to follow me, to the endangering of mine, the very moment you proceed I will shoot you through the head. The harmless creature, at these words. turned himself from me, and I make no doubt got fafe to land. Then turning to the boy Xury, I perceived he trembled at the action; but I put him out of all fear, telling him, that if he would be true and faithful to me, I would do well by And therefore, faid I, you must stroke your face to be faithful, and, as the Turks have learned you, swear by Mahomet, and the beard of your father, or else I will throw you into the sea also. So innocent did the child then look, and with fuch an obliging fmile confented, that I readily believed him, and from that day forward began to love him entirely.

We then pursued our voyage; and lest they should think me gone to the Streights mouth, I kept to the Southward to the truly Barbarian coast; but in the dusk of the evening, I changed my course, and steered directly S. and by E. that I might keep near the shore; and having a fresh gale of wind, with a pleasant smooth sea, by three o'clock next day I was 150 miles beyond the Emperor of Morocco's dominions. Yet still having the dreadful apprehension of being retaken, I continued sailing for sive days successively, till such time as the wind shifting to the southward, made me conclude, that if any vessel was in chase of me, they would proceed no farther. After

To much fatigue and thought, I anchored at the mouth of a little river, I knew not what, or where; neither did I then fee any people. What I principally wanted was fresh water; and I was resolved about the dusk to swim ashore. But no sooner did the gloomy clouds of night begin to succeed the declining day, when we heard fuch barking, roaring, and howling of wild creatures, that one might have thought the very strangest monsters of nature, or infernal spirits, had their residence there. Poor Xury, almost dead with fear, intreated me not to go on shore that night. Supposing I don't, Xury, faid I, and in the morning we should see men who are worse than those we fear, what then? O den we may give dem de shoot-gun, replied Xury laughing, and de gun make dem all run away. The wit, and broken English which the boy had learned among the captives of our nation, pleafed me entirely; and to add to his chearfulness, I gave him a dram of the bottle. We could get but little sleep all the night, for those terrible howlings they made; and indeed we were both very much affrighted, when by the rollings of the water, and other tokens, we justly concluded one of those monsters made towards our boat. I could not fee it till it came within two oars length, when taking my fusee, I let fly at him. Whether I hit him or no, I cannot tell; but he made towards the shore, and the noise of my gun increased the stupendous noise of the monsters.

The next morning I was relolved to go on shore to get fresh water, and venture my life among beasts or savages, should either attack me. Xury said, here

would take one of the jars, and bring me fome. I asked him why he would go, and not I? The poor boy answered, If wild mans come, they eat me, you go way. A mind fearcely now to be imitated, fo contrary to felf-prefervation, the most powerful law of nature! This indeed increased my affection to the child. Well, dear Xury, faid I, we will both go afhore both eat wild mans, and they shall eat neither of us. So giving Xury a piece of Rusk bread to eat, and a dram, we waded on shore, carrying nothing with us but our arms, and two jars for water. I did not go out of fight of the boat, as dreading the favages. coming down the river in their canoes. But the boy feeing a low descent or vale about a mile in the country, he wandered to it; and then running back to me with great precipitation, I thought he was purfued by fome favage or wild beaft; upon which I approached, resolving to perish or protect him from danger. As he came nearer to me, I faw fomething hanging over his shoulders, which was a creature he had shot like a hare, but different in colour, and longer legs; however, we were glad of it, for it proved wholesome and nourish. ing meat; but what added to our joy was, my boy affured me there was plenty of water, and that he fee no wild mans. And greater still was our comfort, when we found fresh water in the creek where we were when the tide was out, without going fo far up into the country.

In this place I began to consider that the Canary and Cape de Verde islands lay not far off; but having no instrument, I knew not what latitude, or when to stand off to sea for them; yet my hopes were I should meet some of the English trading

vessels, who would relieve and take us in.

The place I was in was no doubt that wild country, inhabited only by a few, that lies between the Emperor of Morocco's dominions and the Negroes. It is filled with wild beafts, and the Moors use it for hunting chiefly. From this place I thought I faw the top of the mountain Teneriffe in the Canaries; which made me try twice to attain it; but as often was I drove back, and fo forced to purfue my for-

tune along shore.

Early one morning we came to an anchor under a little point of land, but pretty high; and the tide beginning to flow, we lay ready to go further in. But Xury whose youthful and penetrating eves were sharper than mine, in a fost tone, defired me to keep far from land, left we should be devoured: For look yonder, meyter, faid he, and fee de dreadful monster fast asleep on the side of the bill. Accordingly looking where he pointed, I espied a fearful monster indeed: It was a terrible great lion that lay on shore, covered as it were by a shade of a piece of the hill. Xury, faid I, you shall go on Shore and kill him. But the boy looked amazed: Me kill him, fays he, be eat me at one mouth; meaning one mouthful. Upon which I bid him lie still, and charging my biggest gun with two slugs, and a good charge of powder, I took the best aim I could to shoot him through the head; but his leg lying over his nose, the slug broke his knee-bone. The lion awaking with the pain got up, but foon fell down, giving the most hideous groan I ever heards but taking my second piece, I shot him B 2 through

through the head, and then he lay struggling for life. Upon this Xury took heart, and defired my leave to go on shore. Go then, said I. Upon which taking a little gun in one hand, he swam to shore with the other, and coming close to the lion, put a period to his life, by shooting him again through the head.

But this was spending our ammunition in vain, the sless was not good to eat. Xury was like a champion, and comes on board for a hatchet, to cut off the head of his enemy; but not having strength to perform it, he cut off and brought me a foot. I bethought me however that his skin would be of use. This work cost Zury and me a whole day; when spreading it on the top of our cabin, the hot beams of the sun effectually dried it in two days time, and it afterwards served me for a bed to lie on.

And now we failed foutherly, living sparingly on our provisions, and went no oftner on shore than we were obliged for fresh water. My defign was to make the river Gambia or Senegal, or any where about the Cape de Verd, in hopes to meet some European ship. If providence did not so favour me, my next course was to seek for the islands, or lose my life among the Negroes. And in a word, I put my whole stress upon this: Either that I must meet with some ship, or certainly perish

One day as we were failing along, we faw people stand on the shore looking at us; we could also perceive they were black and stark naked. I was inclined to go on shore; but Zury cried, No. no,

however

r

h

e

it h

1,

a

0

e

n

a

r

e

0

however, I approached nearer, and I found they run along the shore by me a good way. They had no weapons in their hands, except one, who held a long stick, which Zury told me was a launce, with which they could kill at a great distance. I talked to them by signs, and made them sensible I wanted something to eat; they beckoned to me to stop my boat, while two of them ran up into the country, and in less than half an hour came back, and brought with them two pieces of dry slesh, and some corn, which we kindly accepted; and to prevent any fears on either side, they brought the food to the shore, laid it down, then went and stood a great way off, till we fetched it on board, and then came close to us again.

But while we were returning thanks to them, being all we could afford, two mighty creatures came from the mountains, one as it were pursuing the other with great fury, which we were the rather inclined to believe, as they feldom appear but in the night; and both these swiftly passing by the Negroes, jumped into the sea, wantonly swimming about, as though the diversion of the waters had put a stop to their sierceness. At last, one of them coming nearer to my boat than I expected or desired, I shot him directly through the head; upon which he sunk immediately, yet rising again, would have willingly made to the shore; but, between the wound and the strangling of the water, he died before he could reach it.

It is impossible to express the consternation the poor Negroes were in at the firing my gun;

much less can I mention their surprise, when they
B. 3 perceived

perceived the creature to be flain by it. I made figns to them to draw near it with a rope, and then gave it to them to hale on shore; it was a beautiful leopard, which made me defire its skin; and the Negroes feeming to covet the carcase, I freely gave it them. As for the other leopard, it made to shore, and ran with a prodigious swiftness out of fight. The Negroes having kindly furnished me with water, and with what roots and grains their country afforded, I took my leave, and after eleven days fail, came in fight of the Cape de Verd, and those islands called by its name. But the great distance I was from it, and fearing contrary winds would prevent my reaching them, I began to grow melancholy and dejected, when, upon a sudden, Zury crided out, Master, master, a ship with a fail! and looked as affrighted, as if it was his master's ship sent in search of us. But I soon discovered she was a Portuguese ship, as I thought bound to the coast of Guinea, for Negroes. Upon which I strove for life to come up to them. But vain had it been, if through their perspective glaffes they had not percived me, and shortened their fail to let me come up. Encouraged at this, I fet up my patron's ancient, and fired a gun, both as fignals of diffrefs; upon which they very kindly lay to, fo that in three hours time I came up with them. They spoke to me in Portuguese, Spanish, and French, but neither of these did I understand; till at length a Scots failor called, and then I told him I was an Englishman, who had efcaped from the Moors at Sallee; upon which they took me kindly on board, with all my effects. 1 Surely .

Surely none can express the inconceiveable joy I felt at this happy deliverance! who from being a late miserable and forlorn creature, was not only relieved, but in favour with the master of the ship, to whom in return for my deliverance, I offered all I had. God forbid, faid he, that I should take any thing from you. Every thing shall be delivered to you when you come to Brasil. If I have saved your life, it is no more than I should expect to receive myself from any other, when, in the same circumstances, I should happen to meet the like deliverance. And should I take from you what you have, and leave you at Brasil, why this would be only taking away a life I have given. My charity teaches me better. Those effects you have will support you there, and provide you a passage home a-gain. And indeed he acted with the strictest justice in what he did, taking my things into his poffession, and giving me an exact inventory, even to my earthen jars. He bought my boat of me for the ship's use, giving me a note of eighty pieces of eight, payable at Brasil; and if any body offered more, he would make it up. He also gave me 60 pieces for my boy Zury. It was with great reluc-tance I was prevailed upon to fell the child's liberty, who had ferved me so faithfully: but the boy was willing himself; and it was agreed, that after ten years he should be made free, upon his renouncing Mahometism, and embracing Christianity.

Having a pleasant voyage to the Brasils, we arrived in the Bay de Todos los Santos, or All-Saints Bay, in twenty-two days after. And here I can-

not forget the generous treatment of the captain. He would take nothing for my passage, gave me 20 ducats for the leopard's skin, and 30 for the lion. Every thing he caused to be delivered; and what I would sell, he bought. In short, I made about 220 pieces of my cargo; and with this stock I entered once more, as I may say, into the scene of life.

Being recommended to an honest planter, I lived with him till such time as I was informed of the manner of their planting and making sugar; and seeing how well they lived, and how suddenly they grew rich, I was filled with a desire to settle among them, and resolved to get my money remitted to me, and to purchase a plantation.

To be brief, I bought a fettlement next door to an honest and kind neighbour, born at Lisbon, of English parents, whose plantation joining to mine, we improved it very amicably together. Both our stocks were low, and for two years we planted only for food; but the third year we planted some tobacco, and each of us dressed a large piece of ground the ensuing year for planting canes. But now I found how much I wanted assistance, and repented the loss of my dear boy Zury.

Having none to assist me, my father's words came often into my mind; and I used to ask myself, if what I sought was only a middle station of life, why could it not as well be obtained in England as here? When I pondered of this with regret, the thoughts of my late deliverance for sook me. I had none to converse with but my neighbour;

no work to be done but by my own hands; it often made me say, my condition was like that of a man cast upon a desolate island. So unhappy are we in our reslections, so forgetful of what good things we receive ourselves, and so unthankful for our deliverance from those calamities that others endure.

I was in some measure settled, before the captain who took me up, departed from the Brasils. One day I went to him, and told him what stock I had in London, desiring his assistance in getting it remitted; to which the good gentleman readily confented, but would only have me send for half my money, lest it should miscarry; which if it did, I might still have the remainder to support me: and so taking letters of procuration from me, bid me trouble myself no farther about it.

And indeed wonderful was his kindness towards me; for he not only procured the money I had drawn for upon my captain's widow, but fent me over a servant with a cargo, proportionable to my condition. He also sent me over tools of all forts, iron work, and utenfils necessary for my plantation and which proved of the greatest use to me in my

business.

e

Wealth now accumulating on me, and uncommon fuccess crowning my prosperous labours, I might have rested happy in that middle state of life my father had so often recommended; yet nothing would content me, such was my evil genius, but I must leave this happy station, for a foolish ambition in rising; and thus, once more, I cast my-self into the deepest gulf of misery that ever poor creature

creature fell into. Having lived four years in Brasil, I had not only learned the language, but contracted acquaintance with the most eminent planters, and even the merchants of St. Salvadore; to whom, once, by way of discourse, having given an acount of my two voyages to the coast of Guinea, and the manner of trading there for mere trifles, by which we furnish our plantations with Negroes, they gave fuch attention to what I faid, that three of them came one morning to me, and told me they had a fecret propofal to make. After injoining me to fecrecy, (it being an infringement on the power of the kings of Portugal and Spain), they told me they had a mind to fit out a ship to go to Guinea, in order to stock the plantation with Negroes, which, as they could not be publicly fold, they would divide among them; and if I would go their supercargo in the ship, to manage the trading part, I should have an equal share of the Negroes, without providing any stock. The thing indeed was fair enough, had I been in another condition. But I, born to be my own destroyer, could not refist the proposal, but accepted the offer upon condition of their looking after my plantation. So, making a formal will, I bequeathed my effects to my good friend the captain, as my universal heir; but obliged him to dispose of my effects as directed, one half of the produce to himself, and the other to be shipped to England.

The ship being sitted out, and all things ready, we set sail the first of September 1659, being the same day eight year I lest my father and mother in Yorkshire. We sailed Northward upon the

coast

coast, in order to gain Africa, till we made Cape Augustine; from whence going farther in the ocean, out of fight of land, we steered as though we were bound for the isle Fernand de Norenba, leaving the islands on the East; and then it was we met with a terrible tempest, which continued for twelve days successively, so that the winds carried us wherefoever they pleafed. In this perplexity, one of our men died, and one man and a boy were washed overboard. When the weather cleared up a little; we found ourselves eleven degrees north latitude upon the coast of Guiana. Upon this the captain gave reasons for returning; which I opposed, counselling him to stand away for Barbadoes, which, as I supposed, might be attained in fifteen days. So altering our courfe, we failed North-west and by West, in order to reach the Leeward islands; but a second storm fucceeding, drove us to the Westward; so that we were justly afraid of falling into the hands of cruel favages, or the paws of devouring beafts of prey.

1

In this great distress, one of our men, early in the morning, cried out, Land, land; which he had no sooner cried out, but our ship struck upon a sand, and in a moment the sea broke over her in such a manner, that we expected we should all have perished immediately. We knew nothing where we were, or upon what land we were driven; whether an island or the main, inhabited or not inhabited; and we could not so much as hope that the ship would hold out many minutes, without breaking in pieces, except the wind by

OI ei

L

CC

th

m ba

W

fe

fh

to

th

ric

be

fe

bi

at

an

fe

W

1

fe

fe

pi

lei

th

w

fu

th

Wa

OF

a miracle should turn about immediately. While we flood looking at one another, expecting death every moment, the mate lays hold of the boat, and with the help of the rest got her flung over the ship's side, and getting all into her, being eleven of us, committed ourselves to God's mercy, and the wild fea. And now we faw that this last effort would not be a fufficient protection from death; so high did the sea rise, that it was impossible the boat should live. As to making fail, we had none; neither if we had, could we make use of any. So that when we had rowed, or rather were driven about a league and a half, a raging wave, like a lofty mountain, came rolling aftern of us, and took us with fuch fury, that at once it overfet the boat. Thus being swallowed up in a moment, we had hardly time to call upon the tremendous name of God; much less to implore, in dving ejaculations, his infinite mercy to receive our departing fouls.

Men are generally counted infensible, when struggling in the pangs of death! but while I was overwhelmed with water, I had the most dreadful apprehensions imaginable. For the joys of heaven, and the torments of hell, seemed to present themselves before me in these dying agonies, and even small space of time, as it were, between life and death. I was going, I thought, I knew not whither, in a dismal gulph unknown and as yet unperceived, never to behold my friends, nor the light of this world any more! Could I even have thought of annihilation, or a total dissolution of soul as well as body, the gloomy thoughts of this world as well as body, the gloomy thoughts of

having no further being, no knowledge of what we hoped for, but an eternal quietus, without life or sense; even that, I say, would have been enough to strike me with horror and confusion! I strove however to the last extremity, while all my companions were overpowered and intombed in the deep; and it was with great difficulty I kept my breath till the wave fpent itself, and retiring back, left me on the shore half dead with the water I had taken in. As foon as I got on my feet. I ran as fast as I could, lest another wave should pursue me, and carry me back again. But for all the haste I made, I could not avoid it; for the sea came after me like a high mountain, or furious enemy; fo that my business was to hold my breath, and by raising myself on the water, preferve it by swimming. The next dreadful wave buried me at once twenty or thirty foot deep, but at the same time carried me with a mighty force and fwiftness toward the shore; when raising myfelf, I held out as well as possible, till at length the water having spent itself, began to return, at which I struck forward, and feeling ground with my feet, I took to my heels again. Thus being ferved twice more, I was at last dashed against a piece of a rock, in such a manner as left me senseless; but recovering a little before the return of the wave, which, no doubt, would have overwhelmed me, I held fast by the rock till those fucceeding waves abated; and then fetching another run was overtaken by a small wave, which was foon conquered. But before any more could overtake me, I reached the main laid, where clambering

clambering up the clifts of the shore, tired and almost spent, I sat down on the grass, free from

the dangers of the foaming ocean.

No tongue can express the extasses and transports that my foul felt at this happy deliverance. It was like a reprieve to a dying malefactor, with the halter about his neck, and ready to be turned off. I was wrapt up in contemplation, and often lifted up my hands, with the profoundest humility, to the divine powers, for faving my life, when the rest of my companions were all drowned. And now I began to cast my eyes around, to behold what place I was in, and what I had next to do. I could fee no house, nor people; I was wet, yet had no cloaths to shift me: hungry and thirsty, yet nothing to eat or drink; no weapon to destroy any creature for my sustenance, nor defend myself against devouring beasts; in short, I had nothing but a knife, a tobacco-pipe, and a box half filled with tobacco. The darksome night coming upon me, increased my fears of being devoured by wild creatures; my mind was plunged in despair, and, having no prospect, as I thought, of life before me, I prepared for another kind of death than what I had lately escaped. I walked about a furlong to fee if I could find any fresh water, which I did to my great joy, and taking a quid of tobacco to prevent hunger, I got up into a thick bushy tree, and feating myself so that I could not fall, a deep fleep overtook me, and for that night buried my forrows in a quiet repose.

It was broad day the next morning before I awaked; when I not only perceived the tempest

W

as

ha

do

th

ly

to

an

fu

th

h

ha

to

W

go

o

fo

fh

h

ai

te

P

CI

W

T

was ceased, but saw the ship driven almost as far as the rock before mentioned, which the waves had dashed me against, and which was about a mile from the place where I was. When I came down from my apartment in the tree, I perceived the ship's boat two miles distant on my right hand, lying on shore as the wave had cast her. I thought to have got to her, but there being an inlet of water of about half a mile's breadth between it and me. I returned again towards the ship, as hoping to find fomething for my more immediate fubfistence. About noon, when the sea was calm. that I could come within a quarter of a mile of her, it was to my grief I perceived that if we had kept on board, all our lives had been faved. These thoughts, and my solitude, drew tears from my eyes, though all in vain. So resolving to get to the ship, I stript and leaped into the water; when fwimming round her, I was afraid I should not get any thing to lay hold of; but it was my good fortune to espy a small piece of rope hang down by the forechains fo low, that by the help of it, though with great difficulty, I got into the fore-castle of the ship. Here I found that the ship was bulged, and had a great deal of water in her hold; her stern was lifted up against a bank, and her head almost to the water. All her quarter, and what was there, were free and dry. The provisions I found in good order, with which I crammed my pockets; and losing no time, ate while I was doing other things; I also found some rum, of which I took a hearty dram; and now I wanted

wanted for nothing except a boat, which indeed was all, to carry away what was needful for me.

too

out

on

and

pei

fin

lik

wh

alf

an

to

fin

int

ble

mi

th

ed

re

k

m

m

g

b

f

ir

tl

i

1

Necessity occasions quickness of thought. We had several spare yards, a spare top-mast or two, and two or three large spars of wood. With these I fell to work, and flung as many of them over board as I could manage, tying every one of them with a rope that they might not drive away. This done, I went down the ship's side, and tied four of them fast together at both ends in form of a raft, and laying two or three short pieces of plank upon them croffwise, I found it would bear me, but not any considerable weight. Upon which I went to work again, cutting a spare top mast into three lengths, adding them to my raft with a great deal of labour and pains. I then considered what I should load it with, it being not able to bear a ponderous burthen. And this I foon thought of, first laying upon it all the planks and boards I could get; next I lowered down three of the feamens chests, after I had filled them with bread, rice, three dutch cheeses five pieces of dried goats flesh, and some European corn, what little the rats had spared; and for liquors, I found several cases of bottles belonging to our skipper, in which were fome cordial waters, and four or five gallons of rack, which I stowed by themselves. time the tide beginning to flow I perceived my coat waistcoat and shirt swim away, which I had left on the shore; as for my linen breeches and stockings, I fwam with them on to the ship: But I foon found cloaths enough, though I took no more than I wanted for the present. My eyes were chiefly on tools

tools to work with; and after long fearch I found out the carpenters chest which I got safe down on my raft I then looked for arms and ammunition, and in the great cabin found two good fowlingpeices, two pistols, several powder-horns filled, a small bag of shot, and two old rusty swords. likewise found three barrels of powder, two of which were good, but the third had taken water; also two or three broken oars, two saws, an axe, and a hammer. I then put to fea, and in getting to shore, had three encouragements. 1. fmooth calm fea. 2. The tide rising and setting into the shore. 3. The little wind there was blew towards land. After I had sailed about a mile, I found the raft to drive a little distance from the place where I first landed; and then I perceived a little opening of the land, with a strong current of the tide running into it, upon which I kept in the middle of the stream. But great was my concern, when on a fudden the forepart of my raft ran aground; fo that had I not, with great difficulty, for near half an hour, kept my back straining against the chests to keep my effects in their places, all I had would have gone into the fea. But after some time, the rising of the water caused the raft to float again, and coming up a little river, with land on both fides, I landed in a little cave, as near the mouth as poffible, the better to discover a sail, if any such providentially paffed that way.

Not far off, I espied a hill of a stupendous height, surrounded with lesser hills about it; and thither I was resolved to go and view the country,

C 3 that

that I might fee what part was best to fix my habitation in. Accordingly arming myself with a pistol, a fowling-piece, powder and ball, I ascended the mountain. There I perceived I was in an island, encompassed by the sea; no distant lands to be seen, but scattering rocks that lay to the west; that it seemed to be a barren place, and, as I thought, inhabited only by wild beasts. I perceived abundance of sowls, but ignorant of what kind, or whether good for nourishment. I shot one of them at my return, which occasioned a consused scenariog among the other birds; and I found it by its colours and beak, to be a kind of

a hawk, but its flesh was perfect carrion.

When I came to my raft, I brought my effects on shore, which work spent that day entirely; and fearing that fome cruel beafts might devour me in the night-time while I flept, I made a kind of hut or barrocade with the chefts and boards I had brought on shore. That night I slept very comfortably; and the next morning my thoughts were emyloyed to make a further attempt on the ship, and bring away what necessaries I could find, before another storm should break her to pieces. Accordingly I got on board as before, and prepared a fecond raft far more nice than the first; upon which I brought away the carpenter's stores, two or three bags full of nails, a great jack fcrew, a dozen or two of hatchets, and a grindstone. I also took away several things that belonged to the gunner, particularly two or three iron crows, two barrels of musket-bullets, another fowling-piece, a small quantity of powder, and a

al

fa

p

1

f

large bag full of small shot. Besides these, I took all the mens cloaths I could find, a spare foretop sail, hammock, and some bedding; and thus completing my second cargo, I made all the haste to shore I could, searing some wild beast might destroy what I had there already. But I only sound a little wild cat sitting on one of the chests, who not seeming to fear me, or the gun that I presented at her, I threw her a piece of biscuit, which she instantly eat, and departed.

When I had gotten these effects on shore, I went to work, in order to make me a little tent with the sail and some poles which I had cut for that purpose; and having finished it, what things might be damaged by the weather I brought in, piling all the empty chests and casks in a circle, the better to fortify it against any sudden attempt of man or beast. After this, I blocked up the doors with some boards, and an empty chest turned the long way out. I then charged my gun and pistol; and laying my bed on the ground, slept as comfortably, till next morning, as though I had been in a Christian country.

Now, though I had enough to subsist me a long time, yet despairing of a sudden deliverance, or that both ammunition and provision might be spent before such a thing happened, I coveted as much as I could; and so long as the ship remained in that condition, I daily brought away one necessary or other; particularly the rigging, sails, and cordage, some twine, a barrel of wet powder, some sugar, a barrel of meal, three casks of rum; and, what indeed

was most welcome to me, a whole hogshead of bread.

m

th

fr

ar

le

al

W

W

P

ł

The next time I went, I cut the cables in pieces, carried off a haulfer whole, with a great deal of iron work, and made another raft with the mizen and sprit-sail yards; but this being so unweildy, by the too heavy burden I had upon it, and not being able so dexterously to guide it as the former, both my cargo and I were overturned. For my part, all the damage I sustained was a wet skin; and at low water, after much labour in diving, I got most of the cables, and some pieces of iron.

Thirteen days had I now been in the island, and eleven times on board, bringing away all that was possible; and, I believe had the weather been calm, I should have brought away the whole ship piece by piece. As I was going the twelfth time, the wind began to rife; however, I ventured at low water, and rummaging the cabin, in a locker l found feveral razors, sciffars, and some dozens of knives and forks; and in another 36 pounds in pieces of eight filver and gold. Ah! simple vanity, faid I, whom this world so much dotes on, where is now thy virtue, thy excellency to me? You cannot procure me any one thing that is needful, nor remove me from this desolate island to a place of plenty. One of these knives so meanly esteemed, is to me more preferable than all this heap. E'en therefore remain where thou art, to fink in the deep, as unregarded, even as a creature whose life is not worth preserving. Yet, after all this exclamation, I wrapt it up in a piece of canvass, and began to think of making

making another raft; but I foon perceived the wind began to arife, a fresh gale blowing from the shore, and the sky overcast with clouds and darkness. So thinking a raft to be in vain, I let my self into the water with what things I had about me; and it was with much difficulty I got ashore, when soon after it blew a fearful storm.

That night I slept very contentedly in my little tent, surrounded with all my effects; but when I looked out in the morning, no more ship was to be seen. This much surprized me for the present; yet when I considered I had lost no time, abated no pains, and had got every thing useful out of her, I comforted myself in the best manner, and entirely submitted to the will of Providence.

My next thoughts were, bow I should defend and secure myself from savages and wild beasts, if any such were in the island. At one time I thought of digging a cave; at another, I was for erecting a tent; and, at length, I resolved to do both: The manner or form of which, will not, I

hope, be unpleasing to describe.

When I considered the ground where I was; that it was moorish, and had no fresh water near it; my resolutions were to search for a soil healthy and well watered, where I might not only be sheltered from the sun's scorching heat, but be more conveniently situated, as well as to be secured from wild men, and beasts of prey, as more easily to discover any distant sail, should it ever so happen.

And indeed it was not long before I had my defire, I found a little plain near a rifing hill, the

front

front towards which being as steep as a house-side nothing could descend on me from the top. On the fide of this rock was a little hollow place, resembling the entrance or door of a cave. Just before this place, on the circle of the green, I refolved my tent should stand. This plain did not much exceed 100 yards broad, and about twice as long, like a delighful green before my door, with a pleafing though irregular descent every way to the low grounds by the fea-fide, lying on the N. N. W. side of the hill, so that it was sheltered from the excessive heat of the sun. After this I drew a semicircle, containing 10 yards in its semidiameter, and 20 yards in the whole, driving down two rows of strong stakes not six inches from each other. Then with the pieces of cable which I had cut on board, I regularly laid them in the circle between the piles upon their tops which were more than five foot out of the earth, and after drove another row of piles looking within fide against them, between two or three foot high, which made me conclude it a little impregnable castle for men and beafts. And for my better fecurity, I would have no door, but entered in and came out by the help of a ladder, which I also made.

Here was my fence and fortress into which I carried all my riches, ammunition, and stores. After which working on the rock, what with the dirt and stones I dug out, I not only raised my ground two feet, but made a little cellar to my mansion-house; and this cost me many days labour and pains. One day in particular a shower of rain falling, thunder and lightning enfued, which put

me

me

not

ing

tion

and

nea

kin

gun

foot

Ye

cou

low

ling

fto

to

and

it (

flay

ev

he

ma

m

fr

W

m

W

ne

bo

y

e

y

me in terror left my powder should take fire, and not only hinder my necessary sublistence, by killing me food, but even blow up me and my habitation. To prevent which, I fell to making boxes and bags, in order to seperate it, having by me near 150 weight. And thus being established as king of the island, every day I went out with my gun to see what I could kill that was fit to eat. I foon perceived numbers of goats, but very shy. Yet having watched them narrowly, and feeing I could better shot off the rocks than when in the low grounds, I happened to shoot a she-goat, suckling a young kid; who not thinking its dam flain, stood by her unconcerned; and when I took the dead creature up, the young one followed me even to the inclosure. I lifted the kid over the pales, and would willingly have kept it alive; but finding it could not be brought to eat, I was forced to flay it also for my own subfishence.

Thus entered into as strange a scene of life, as ever any man was in, I had most maloncholy apprehensions concerning my deplorable condition; and many times the tears would plentifully run down my face, when I considered how I was debarred from all communication with humankind. Yet while these desponding cogitations would seem to make me accuse Providence, other good thoughts would interpose and reprove me after this manner: Well, supposing you are desolate, is it not better to be so than totally perish? Why were you singled out to be saved, and the rest destroyed? Why should you complain, when not only your life is preserved, but the ship driven even in-

to your reach, in order to take what was necessary out of her for your subsistence? But to proceed. It was, by the account I kept, the 30th of Septembor, when I first landed on this island. About twelve days after, fearing left I should lose my reckoning of time, nay even forget the Sabbathdays, for want of pen, ink, and paper, I carved with a knife upon a large post, in great letters, and set It up, in the similitude of a cross, on the sea-shore where I landed, 'I came on shore, Sept. 30, 1659.' Every day I cut a notch with my knife on the fides of this fquare post, and that on Sabbath was as long again as the rest; and every first day of the month as long again as that long one. In this manner I kept my calendar, weekly, monthly, or yearly reckoning of time. But had I made a more strict search (as I did afterwards), I need not have fet up this mark. For among the parcels belonging to the gunner, carpenter, and captain's mate, I found those very things I wanted; particularly pens, ink, and paper; also I found two or three compasses, some mathematical instruments, dials, perspective glasses, books of navigation, three English bibles, and feveral other good books, which I carefully put up. Here I cannot but call to mind our having a dog and two cats on board, whom I made inhabitants with me in my caftle. Though one might think I had all the necessaries that were defirable, yet still I found several things My ink was daily wasting: I wanted needles, pins, and thread, to mend or keep my cloaths together: and particularly a spade, pickaxe, or shovel to remove the earth. It was a year

an

tin

an

no

rem

and

year before I finished my little bulwark; and having some intervals of relaxation, after my daily wandering abroad for provision, I drew up this plan, alternately, as creditor and debtor, to remind me of the miseries and blessings of my life, under so many various circumstances.

EVIL.

I am cast upon a desolate island, having no hopes, no prospect of a welcome deliverance.

Thus miserably am I fingled out from the enjoyment or company of all mankind.

Like an hermit (rather should I say a lovely anchorite) am I forced from human conversation.

My cloaths, after some time, will be worn out; and then I shall have none to cover me.

When my ammunition is wasted, then shall I remain without any defence against wild men and beasts,

I have no creature, no

G O O D.

But yet I am preserved while my companions are perished in the raging ocean.

Yet set apart to be spared from death. And he, who has so preserved me, can deliver me from this condition.

However, I have food to eat, and even a happy prospect of subsistence whilst life endures.

At present I enjoy what is absolutely needful; and the climate is so hot, that had I never so many, I should hardly wear them.

Yet if it does, I see no danger of any to hurt me, as in Africa: And what if I had been cast away upon that coast?

Is there not God to

EVIL

GOOD

foul to speak to; none to beg assistance from. Some comfort would it be to resound my woes where I am understood; and beg assistance, where I might hope for relief.

converse to, and is not he able to relieve thee; Already has he afforded thee sustenance, and put it in thy power to provide for thyself till he sends thee a deliverance.

V

And now easing my mind a little by these reflections, I began to render my life as easy as possible, I must here add, to the déscription I have given of my habitation, that having raifed a turfwall against the outside of it, I thatched it so close, as might keep it from the inclemency of the weather; I also improved it within, enlarged my cave, and made a passage and door in the rock, which came out beyond the pale of my fortification. I next proceeded to make a chair and table, and fo began to fludy fuch mechanical arts as feemed to me practicable. When I wanted a plank or board, I hewed down a tree with my hatchet, making it as thin with my axe as possible, and then fmooth enough with an adze to answer my designs: Yet though I could make no more this way than one board out of a tree, in length of time, I got boards enough to shelter all my stores, every thing being regularly placed, and my guns fecurely hanging against the fide of the rock. This made it a very pleasant fight to me, being the result of vast labour and diligence; which leaving for a while, and me to the enjoyment of, I shall give the reader an account of my journal from the day of my

my landing, till the fixing and fettling of my habitation, as heretofore shewn.



JOURNAL.

September 30, 1659, I unhappy Robinson Crufoe, having suffered shipwreck, was driven on this desolate island, which I named the Desolate island of Despair, the rest being swallowed up in the tempestuous ocean. The next day I spent in consideration of my unhappy circumstances, having no prospect, but of death, either to be starved with hunger, or devoured by beasts or merciles sa-

vages.

Octob. 1. That morning with great comfort I beheld the ship drove ashore. Some hopes I had, that when the storm was abated, I might be able to get some food and necessaries out of her; which I conceived were not damaged, because the ship did stand upright. At this time I lamented the loss of my companions, and our misfortune in leaving the vessel. When I perceived the ship as it were lie dry, I waded through the sands, then swam aboard, the weather being very rainy, and with scarcely any wind.

To the 14th of this month, my time was employed in making voyages, every tide getting what I could out of the ship. The weather very

wet, and uncertain.

Octob. 20. My raft, and all the goods thereon
D 2 were

were overset; yet I recovered most again at low water.

Octob. 25. It blew hard, and rained night and day, when the ship went in pieces, so that nothing was seen of her but the wreck at low water. This day I secured my goods from the inclemency of the weather.

Octob. 26. I wandered to fee where I could find a place convenient for my abode. I fixed upon a rock in the evening, marked out a half-moon, intending to erect a wall, fortified with piles, lined within with pieces of cables, and covered with turf.

Nov. 1. I erected my tent under a rock; and took up my lodging very contentedly in a hammock that night.

Nov. 2. This day I fenced myself in with tim-

ber, chests, and boards.

Nov. 3. I shot two wild fowl, refembling ducks, which were good to eat; and in the afternoon made me a table.

Nov. 4. I began to live regularly. In the morning I allowed myself two or three hours to walk out with my gun; I then worked till near eleven o'clock; and afterwards refreshed myself with what I had to eat. From twelve to two, I would lie down to sleep. Extreme sultry weather. In the evening go to work again.

Nov. 5. Went out with my gun and dog, shot a wild cat with a soft skin, but her slesh was good for nothing. The skins of those I killed I preserved. In my return, I perceived many wild birds,

t

V

C

birds, and was terrified by some seals, which made off to sea.

Nov. 6. Compleated my table.

Nov. 7. Fair weather. I worked till the 12th, but omitted the 11th, which, according to my cal-

culation, I supposed to be Sunday.

Nov. 13. Rain in abundance, which however much cooled the earth, when thunder and lightning caused in me a terrible surprise, The weather clearing, I secured my powder in separate parcels.

Nov. 14 to 16. I made little boxes for my powder, lodging them in feveral places. I also shot a large fowl, which proved excellent meat.

Nov. 17. I began to dig in the rock, yet was obliged to desist for want of a pickaxe, shovel, and wheel-barrow. Iron crows I caused to supply the place of the first; but with all my art I could not make a wheel-barrow,

Nov. 18. It was my fortune to find a tree, refembling what the Brassilians calls an iron-tree. I had like to have spoiled my axe with cutting it, being very hard and exceeding heavy: yet, with much labout and industry, I made a fort of a spade out of it.

Nov. 23. These tools being made, I daily carried on my business; eighteen days I allowed for enlarging my cave, that it might serve me, not only for a warehouse, but kitchen, parlour, and cellar. I commonly lay in the tent, unless the weather was rainy that I could not lie dry. So wet would it be at certain seasons, that I was obliged to cover all within the pale, with long poles in the

form of rafters leaning against the rock, and load them with slags, and large leaves of trees resem-

ifl

pi th

th

PI

ly

it

OI I

ol

la

bo

CC

h

al

li

7

ai

fe

if

e

e

a

a

t

b

bling a thatch.

Dec, 10. No sooner did I think my habitation finished, but suddenly a great deal of the top broken in, so that it was a mercy I was not buried in the ruins. This occasioned a great deal of pains and trouble to me, before I could make it firm and durable.

Dec. 17. I nailed up some shelves, and drove nails and staples in the wall and posts to hang things out of the way.

Dec, 20. Every thing I got into its place, then

made a fort of a dreffer, and another table.

Dec. 24, 25. Rain in abundance.

Dec. 26. Very fair weather.

Dec. 27. I chanced to light on some goats; shot one, wounded another, I led it home in a string, bound up his leg, and cured it in a little time; at length it became so tame and familiar, as to feed before the door, and follow me where I pleased. This put me in mind to bring up tame creatures in order to supply me with food after my ammunition was spent.

Dec. 28, 29, 30. The weather excessive hot with little air, obliged me for the most part to keep

within doors.

Jan. 1, Still sultry. However, obliged by necessity, I went out with my gun, and found a great store of goats in the valleys; they were exceedingly shy, nor could any dog hunt them down.

Jan. 3. to 14. My employment this time was to finish the wall before described, and search the island.

d

n

e

e

1

island I discovered a kind of pigeons like our housepigeons, in a nest among the rocks. I brought them home, nursed them till they could fly, and then they lest me. After this I shot some, which proved excellent food. Some time I spent vainly in contriving to make a cask; I may well say it was vain, because I could neither join the staves, or fix the heads, to make it tight; so leaving that, I took some goats tallow I had by me, and a little okum for the wick, and provided myself with a

lamp, which ferved me instead of candles.

But now a very strange event happened. For being in the height of my search, what should come into my hand, but a bag, which was used to hold corn (as I supposed for the fowls): so immediately resolving to put gunpowder in it, I shook all the husks and dirt upon one side of the rock, little expecting what the consequence would be. The rain had fallen plentifully a few days before; and about a month after, to my great amazement, something began to look out very green and flourishing: and when I came to view it more nicely, every day as it grew, I sound about ten or twelve ears of green barley appeared in the very same shape and make as that in England.

I can scarce express the agitations of my mind at this sight. Hitherto I had looked upon the actions of this life, no otherwise than only as the events of blind chance and fortune. But now, the appearance of this barley, flourishing in a barren soil, and my ignorance in not conceiving how it should come there, made me conclude that miracles were not ceased: nay, I even thought

that God had appointed it to grow there with out any feed, purely for my fustenance in the miserable and desolate island. And indeed sud great effect this had upon me, that it often made me melt into tears, through a gratefi fense of God's mercies; and the greater sti bou was my thankfulness, when I perceived about who this little field of barley fome rice stalks, all as I

wonderfully flourishing.

pen While thus pleased in mind, I concluded there the must be more corn in the island; and therefore but made a diligent fearch narrowly among the rocks time but not being able to find any, on a sudden it ning of corn out of the bag, and then my admiration I sto ceased, with my gratitude to the divine being that as thinking it was but natural, and not to be I far conceived a miracle; though even the manner of ther its preservation might have made me own it as ever a wonderful event of God's kind providence. mor

ears of this corn ripened, which I laid up very men carfully, together with 20 or 30 stalks of rice, F expecting one day I should reap the fruit of my place labour; yet four years were expired before I could ing allow myself to eat any barley-bread, and much very longer time before I had any rice. After this, my with indefatigable pains and industry for three or and four months, at last I finished my wall on the 14th of April having no way to go into it' but my by a ladder against the wall. ven

April 16. I finished my ladder, and ascended not it; afterwards pulled it up, then let it down on had the other side, and descended into my new habita-

NOD.

tion

that

the

avai

tion, where I had space enough, and so fortified, that nothing could attack me, without scaling the walls.

But what does all human pains and industry avail, if the bleffing of God do not crown our labours? Or, who can stand before the almighty, when he stretcheth forth his arm? For one time, as I was at the entrance of my cave, there happened fuch a dreadful earthquake, that not only the roof of the cave came tumbling about my ears, but the posts seemed to crack terribly at the same stime. This put me in great amazement; and runi ning to my ladder, and getting over the wall, I then plainly knew it was an earthquake, the place I stood on sustaining three terrible shocks in less than three minutes. But judge of my terror when I saw the rop of a great rock roll into the sea; I then expected the island would be sawllowed up every moment: And what made the scene still more dreadful, was to fee the fea thrown into the most violent agitations and disorders by this tremendous accident.

For my part, I stood like a criminal at the place of execution, ready to expire. At the moving of the earth, I was, as it were, fea-fick; and very much afraid left the rock, under which was my fence and habitation, should overwhelm me and it in a lasting tomb.

c

When the third dreadful shock had spent itself; my spirits began to revive; yet still I would not venture to ascend the ladder, but continued sitting, not knowing what I should do. So little grace had I then, as only to fay, Lord have mercy upon

in.

ftr

ch

tim

ful

an

my

ing

fe!

fo

of

in

W

bu

W

fo

to

p

m

h

fl

W

d

a

P

me! and no fooner was the earthquake over, bu

that pathetic prayer left me.

It was not long after, when a horrible ten pest arose, at the same time attended with a hur ricane of wind. The fea feemed mountains high and the waves rolled fo inpetuously, that nothing could be perceived but froth and foam. hours did this storm continue, and in so voilent manner, as to tear the very trees up by the roots which was fucceeded by abundance of rain. When the tempest was over, I went to my tent; but the rain coming on in a furious manner, I was oblig ed to take shelter in the cave, where I was force to cut a channel through my fortification to let the It continued raining all that night, and fome time the next day. These accidents made me resolve, as soon as the weather cleared up, to build me a little hut in some open place walled round to defend me from wild creatures and favages, not doubting, but at the next earthquake. the mountain would fall upon my habitation and me and swallow up all in its bowels.

April 16.—20. These days I spent in contriving how and in what manner I should fix my place of abode. All this while I was under the most dreadful apprehensions. When I looked round my habitation, every thing I sound in its proper place. I had several resolutions whether I should move or not; but at length I resolved to stay where I was, till I sound out a convenient place

where I might pitch my tent.

April 22. When I began to put my resolutions

in practice, I was stopt for want of tools and instruments to workwith. Most of my axes and hatchets were useless, occasioned by cutting the hard
timber that grew on the island. It took me up a
full week to make my grindstone of use to me;
and at last I found out a way to turn it about with
my foot, by help of a wheel and a string.

April 28. 29. These days were spent in grind-

ing my tools.

bu

tem

hur

nigh hing

hre

nt

oots

he

the

lig

.ced

the

and

ade

, to

Icd

V4.

the

ne,

iv.

2 Ce

oft

nd

er

ild

ay

ce

ns in April 30. My bread falling short, I allowed my-

felf but one biscuit a day.

May 1. As I walked along the fea shore, I found a barrel of gunpowder, and several pieces of the wreck, which the sea had slung up. Having secured those, I made to the ship, whose stern was torn off, and washed a great distance ashore; but the rest lay in the sands. This I supposed was occasioned by the earthquake. I now resolved to keep my old place of abode; and also to go to the ship that day, but then found it impossible.

May 3. This day I went on board, and with my faw fawed off one of the beams, which kept her quarter-deck. I then cleared the fand till

flood.

May 4. I caught some fish, but they were not wholesome. The same day I also catched a young

dolphin.

May 5. This day I also repaired to the wreck, and sawed another piece of timber: and when the flood came, I made a float of three great planks, which was driven ashore by the tide.

May 6, 7, 8, 9. These days I brought off the iron

iron bolts, opened the deck with the iron crow and carried two planks to land, having made way into the very middle of the wreck.

May 10, 11, 12, 13, 14. All this time I spen in bringing off great quantities of iron and timber

May 15. Took with me two hatchets on pur pose to cut off some lead off the the roll, but a in vain, for it lay too low under water.

May 16. I omitted going to the wreck this day; for employing myself in looking out pigions

I outstaid my time.

May 17. I perceived several pieces of the wreck blown ashore, which I found belonging to

the head of the ship.

May 24. To this day I worked on the wreck, and with great difficulty lootened some things so much with the crow, that the first blowing tide several casks floated out, and many of the seamens chests; yet that day nothing came to land but pieces of timber, and a hogshead which had some Brasil pork in it, I continued working to the 15th of June, (except the necessary times for food and rest); and had I known how to have built a boat, I had timber and planks enough; I had also near 100 weight of sheet-lead.

June 16. As I was wandering towards the seaside, I found a large tortoise or turtle, being the first I had seen on the island, though, as I afterwards found, there were many on the other side

of it.

June 17. This day I fpent in cooking it, found in her threefcore eggs, and her flesh the most favoury and pleasant I ever tasted in my life.

unc

COL

and

blin

wi

the

to

my

and

ble

bro

it,

agu

Pra

upo

012

mu

a f

ble

gro

wh

tha

clo

June 18. I staid within this day, there being a continual rain; and it was something more chilly and cold than usual.

June 19. Exceeding bad, taken with a trem-

bling and shivering.

June 20. Awake all night, my head racked

with pain, and feverish.

June 21. Sick unto death, and terrified with the difmal apprehensions of my condition: Prayed to God more frequently, but very confusedly.

June 22. Something better; but still uneasy in

my mind.

e

en

ber

our al

hi

ons

h

to

ck,

fo

de

ns

ut

ne

th

nd

ıt,

ar

e

June 23. Again relapsed much as before.

June 24. Mended a fecond time.

June 25. A violent ague for seven hours, cold

and hot fits, succeeded with faint sweats.

June 26. Better, but very weak; yet I scarmbled out, shot a she-goat, brought it home and broiled some of it: I would willingly have stewed

it, and made fome broth, but had no pot.

June 27. All this day I was afflicted with an ague; thirsty, yet could not help myself to water: Prayed to God in these words; Lord, in pity look upon me; Lord have mercy upon me; have mercy upon me! After this I fell asleep, which I found had much refreshed me when I awaked. I fell asleep a second time, and fell into this strange and terrible fort of dream.

Methought I was fitting on the same spot of ground, at the outside of the wall where I sat when the storm blew after the earthquake; and that I saw a man descending from a great black cloud, and light upon the ground. He was all

E

over

over as bright as a flash of fire that a little before surrounded him; his countenance inconceivably terrible; the earth as it were trembled when he steps upon the ground, and slashes of fire seemed to fill all the air. No sooner I thought him landed upon the earth, but with a long spear or other weapon he made towards me; but first ascending a rising ground, his voice added to my amazement, when I thought I heard him pronounce these dreadful words, Unhappy wretch! seeing all these things have not brought thee to repentance, thou shah immediately die. In pronouncing this dreadful sentence, I thought he went to kill me with the

a

fl

P

C

fa

e

CC

th

th

fe

ea

G

lor

fpi

dif

of

my

Wit

vok

anc

the

utte

dear

and

he i

Bou

bare

spear that was in his hand.

Any body may think it impossible for me to express the horrors of my mind at this vision; and even when I awaked, this very dream made a deep impression upon my mind. The little divine knowledge I had, I received from my father's instructions, and that was worn out by an uninterrupted series of seafaring impiety for eight years fpace. Except what fickness forced from me, Ido not remember I had one thought of lifting up my heart towards God; but rather had a certain stupi dity of foul, not having the least sense of fear of the omnipotent Being when in distress, nor of gratitude to him for his deliverances. Nay, when I was on the desperate expedition on the desen African shore, I cannot remember I had ont thought of what would become of me, or to beg his confolation and affishance in my sufferings and When the Portugal captain took me up distress. and honourably used me; nay, farther, when

was even delivered from drowning by escaping to this island, I never looked upon it as a judgment, but only said I was an unfortunate dog, and that's all. Indeed some secret transports of soul I had, which was not through grace, but only a common slight of joy, that I was yet alive, when my companions were all drowned: and no other joy could I conceive but what is common with the sailors over a bowl of punch, after they had escap-

ed the greatest dangers.

n. r. do

nd

up,

The likelihood of wanting for neither food nor conveniencies, might have called upon me for a thankful acknowledgment to Providence. Indeed the growth of my corn touched me with some sense; but that soon wore off again. The terrible earthquake pointed to me as it were the singer of God, but my dreadful amazement continued no longer than its duration. But now, when my spirits began to sink under the burthen of a strong distemper, and I could leisurely view the miseries of death present themselves before my eyes; then my awakened conscience began to reproach me with my past life, in which I had so wickedly provoked the justice of God to pour down his vengeance upon me.

Such reflections as these oppressed me even in the violence of my distemper. Some prayers I uttered which only proceeded from my fear of death. But when I considered my father's advice and prophecy, I could not forbear weeping: for he told me, That if I did persist in my folly, I should not only be deprived of God's blessing, but have time enough to reflect upon my despising his in-

E 2 Structions;

ftructions; and this in wretched time, when none could help me. And now concluding it to be fulfilled, having no foul in the island to administer any comfort to me, I prayed earnestly to the Lord, that he would help me in this my great calamity. And this, I think, was the first time I prayed in sincerity for many years. But now I

must return to my journal.

June 28. Something refreshed with sleep, and the fit quite off, I got up. My dream still occasioned in me a great consternation; and fearing that the ague might return the succeeding day, I concluded it time to get something to comfort me. I filled a case-bottle with water, and set it within the reach of my bed; and to make it more nourishing, and less chilly, I put some rum into it. The next thing I did was to boil me a piece of goat-slesh, of which I ate but little. I was very weak; however, walked about, dreading the return of my distemper; and at night I supped on three of the turtle's eggs, which I roasted and ate, begging God's blessing therewith.

b

t

n

ir

30

u

W

W

th

m

W

W

th

in

CO

tui

tha

iea,

After I had eaten, I attempted to walk again out of doors with my gun; but was so weak, that I sat down, and looked at the sea, which was smooth and calm. While I continued here, these thoughts

came into my mind.

In what manner is the production of the earth and fea, which I have feen so much of? From whence came myself, and all other creatures living, and of what are we made?

Our beings were affuredly created by some almighty invisible power, who framed the earth, the

fea, and air, and all therein. But what is that

power?

Certainly it must follow, that God has created it all. Yet said I, if God has made all this, he must be the ruler of them all, and what is relating thereto; for certainly the power that makes, must indisputably have a power to guide and direct them. And if this be so, (as certainly it must), nothing can happen without his knowledge or appointment. Then surely if nothing happens without God's appointment, certainly God has appointed these my sufferings to befal me. And here I sixed my sirm belief, that it was his will that it should be so; and then proceeded to enquire, why should God deal with me in this manner? Or what had I done thus to deserve his indignation?

Here conscience slew in my face, reprehending me as a blasphemer; crying with a loud and piercing voice, Unworthy wretch? dare you ask what you have done? Look upon your past life, and see what you have left undone? Ask thyself, why thou wert not long ago in the merciles hands of death. Why not drowned in Yarmouth roads, or killed in the fight when the ship was taken by the Sallee man of war? Why not entombed in the bowels of wild beasts on the African coast, or drowned here when all thy companions suffered shipwreck in

the ocean?

ts

a,

Struck dumb with these reslections, I rose up in a pensive manner, being so thoughtful that I could not go to sleep; and fearing the dreadful return of my distemper, it caused me to remember that the Brasilians use tobacco for almost all diseases.

E:

I then went to my chest, in order to find some, where Heaven no doubt directed me to find a cure for both soul and body; for there I sound one of the bibles, which till this time I never had neither leisure nor inclination to look into; I took both the tobacco and that out of the chest, and laid them on the table. Several expriments did I try with the tobacco: First I took a piece of leaf and chewed it; but it being very green and strong, almost stupised me. Next I steeped it in some rum an hour or two, resolving when I went to bed to take a dose of it; and in the third place, I burnt some over a pan of sire, holding my nose over it so long as I could endure it without suffocation.

In the intervals of this operation, though my head was giddy and disturbed at the tobacco, I took up the Bible to read. No sooner did I open it, but there appeared to me these words, Call on me in the day of trouble, and I will deliver thee, and

b

H

n

n

fo

w

fir

In I

we th

de

fo

wl

me

thou Shalt glorify me.

At first this sentence made a very deep impression on my heart; but it soon wore off again, when I considered the word deliver was foreign to me, And as the children of Israel said, when they were promised sless to eat, Can God spread a table in the wilderness? in like manner I began to say, Can God himself deliver me from this desolate island? However the words would still return to my mind, and afterwards made a greater impression upon me. As it now was very late, and the tobacco had dozed my head, I was inclined to sleep; but before I would lie down, I fell on my knees, and implored the promise that God had made

made to me in the holy scriptures, that if I called upon him in the day of trouble. he would deliver me. With much difficulty I after drank the rum, wherein I had steeped the tobacco; which slying in my head, threw me into such a profound sleep, that it was three o'clock the next day before I awaked; or rather, I believe, I slept two days, having certainly lost a day in my account, and I could never tell any other way. When I got up, my spirits were lively and chearful; my stomach much better, being very hungry; and in short, no sit returned the next day, which was the 29th, but I found myself much altered for the better.

The 30th, I went abroad with my gun, but not far, and killed a fea-fowl or two, refembling a brand-goofe, which however I cared not to eat when I brought them home, but dined on two more of the turtle's eggs. In the evening I renewed my medicine, excepting that I did not take fo large a quantity, neither did I chew the leaf, or hold my head over the smoke: But next day, which was the 1st of July, having a little spice of the cold fit, I again took my medicine as I did the

first time.

t

20

id

1.

n,

to

a

to

te

to

ef.

he

to

ny

ad de July 3. The fit quite left me, but very weak. In this condition, I often thought of these words, I will deliver thee; and while at sometimes I would think of the impossibility of it, other thoughts would reprehend me for disregarding the deliverances I had received, even from the most forlorn and distressed condition, I asked myself, what regard have I had to God for his abundant mercies? Have I done my part? He has delivered

me, but I have not glorified him;—as if I had faid, I had not owned and been thankful for these as deliverances, and how could I expect greater? So much did this sensibly touch my heart, that I gave God thanks for my recovery from sickness in

n

a

if

k

ai

tie

m

W

on

We

Wa

of

do

the

noi

gro

pla

not

the most humble prostration.

July 4. This morning I began feriously to ponder on what is written in the New Testament, refolving to read a chapter every morning and night as long as my thoughts would engage me. foon as I fet about this work feriously, I found my heart deeply affected with the impiety of my past life; these words that I thought were spoken to me in my dream revived, All these things have not brought thee to repentance. After this, I begged of God to affift me with his Holy Spirit in returning to my duty. One day, in perufing the scriptures, I came to these words, He is exalted a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance, and to give remission: Immediately I laid down the book, and, with uplifted hands to heaven, loudly cried, O blessed Jesus, thou son of David, Jesus thou exalted Prince and Saviour, give me repentance! And now indeed I prayed with a true sense of my condition, and a more certain hope founded on the word of God. Now I had a different sense of these words, Call on me, and I will deliver thee, that is, from the dreadful load of guilt, which oppressed my sinfal foul, and not from a solitary life, which might rather be called a bleffing, (feeing I wanted neither food nor raiment), when compared with living among the human race, furrounded with so much oppression, misery, and affliction: In a word I came

came to this conclusion, that a deliverance from sin. was a much greater blessing than a deliverance from affliction. But again I proceed to my journal.

To the 24th of July, I walked about with my gun, little and little at a time, having been reduced to the greatest extremity of weakness. The applications and experiments I used, were perfectly new; neither could I recommend them to any one's practice. For though it carried off the fit, it very much weakened me; and I had frequently convulsions in my nerves and limbs for fome time. From hence I learned that going abroad in rainy weather especially when it was attended with storms and hurricances of wind, was most pernicious to health. I had now been above ten months in the island; and as I never had feen any of the human kind, I therefore accounted myfelf as sole monarch; and as I grew better, having fecured my habitation to my mind, I refolved to make a tour round my kingdom, in order to make new discoveries.

The 15th of July I began my journey. I first went to the creek, where I had brought my rafts on shore; and travelling farther, found the tide went no higher than two miles up, where there was a little brook of running water, on the bank of which were many pleasant Savannas or meadows, plain, smooth, and covered with grafs. On the rising parts, where I supposed the water did not reach, I perceived a great deal of tobacco growing to a very strong stalk. Several other plants I likewise found, the virtues of which I did not understand. I searched a long time for the Cassava

3.

Cassava root, which I knew the Indians in that climate made their bread of; but all in vain. There were several plants of aloes, though at that time I knew not what they were: Likewise I saw several sugar-canes, but imperfect for want of cultivation. With these few discoveries I came back that night, and slept contentedly in my little castle.

The next day, being the 16th, going the same way, but farther than the day before, I found the country more adorned with woods and trees. Here I perceived different fruits in great abundance. Melons in plenty lay on the ground, and clusters of grapes, ripe and very rich, spread over the trees. You may imagine I was glad of this discovery, yet ate very sparingly, lest I should throw myself in a flux or fever. The grapes I found of excellent use; for when I had dried them in the sun, which preserved them as dried raisins are kept, they proved very wholesome and nourishing, and served me in those seasons when no grapes were to be had.

The night drawing on apace, I ascended up a tree, and slept very comfortably, though it was the first time I had lain out of my habitation. And when the morning came I proceeded with great pleasure on my way, travelling about four miles, as I imagined by the length of the valley, directing my course northward, there being a ridge of hills on the south and north side of me. At the end of this valley I came to an opening where the country seemed to descend to the west: There I found a little spring of fresh water, proceeding out of the side of a hill with its crystal streams

ftreams running directly east. And indeed here my fenses were charmed with the most beautiful landscape nature could afford; for the country appeared so flourishing, green and delightful, that to me it seemed like a planted garden. I then descended on the fide of that delicious vale, when I found abundance of cocoa, orange, lemons, and citron trees; but very wild and barren at that time. As for the limes, they were delightful and wholefome, the juice of which I after used to mix in water, which made it very cool and refreshing. And now I was refolved to carry home and lay up a store of grapes, limes, and lemons, against the approaching wet feafon. So laying them up in feparated parcels, and then taking a few of each with me, I returned to my little castle, after having spent three days in this journey. Before I got home, the grapes were fo bruifed that they were utterly spoiled; the limes indeed were good, but of these I could bring only a few.

July 19. Having prepared two bags, I returned thither again; but to my great surprise found all the grapes spread about, trod to pieces and abundance eaten, which made me conclude there were wild beasts thereabouts. To prevent this happening again, I gathered a large quantity of the grapes, and hung them on the out-branches of the trees, both to keep them unburt and that they might cure and dry in the sun: and having well loaded myself with limes and lemons, I returned once more to my old place of residence.

And now contemplating on the fruitfulness of this valley, the pleasantness of its situation, its se-

curity from storms, and the delightfulness of the adjacent woods, I concluded I was fettled in the worst part of the country, and therefore was thinking to remove my habitation. But when I confidered again, that though it was pleasant, it was off from the fea-side, where there was a possibility, fome time or other, a ship might either be driven or fail by: and that to inclose myself among hills and woods must certainly put an end to the hopes of deliverance; I resolved to let my castle remain where Providence had first assigned it. Yet so ravished was I with this place, that I made a little kind of bower, furrounding it with a double hedge, as high as I could reach, well staked, and filled with bulrushes; and having spent a great part of the month of July, I think it was the first of August before I began to enjoy my labour.

Aug. 3. Perceiving my grapes to be dry, I took them from the trees, and they proved excellent good raisins of the sun; the most of which I carried to my cave; and happy for me I did so, by which

u

h

fe

ju

to

til

ing

I faved the best part of my winter-food.

Aug. 14. This day it began to rain; and though I had made me a tent like the other, yet having no shelter of a hill to keep me from storms, nor a cave behind me to retreat to, I was obliged to return to my old castle. The rain continued more or less every day till the middle of october; and sometimes so violently, that I could not stir out of my cave for several days. This season I sound my family to increase; for one of my cats that run away from me, and who I thought had been dead, returned about august, with three kittens at her heels, like herself;

herself; which I thought strange, because both my cats were females, and the wild cats of the island seemed to be of a different kind from our European cats; but from these cats proceeded such numbers, that I was forced to kill and destroy them as I would do wild beasts or vermin.

To the 26th of this month I could not stir out, it raining inceffantly: when beginning to want food, I was compelled to venture twice, the first of which I shot a goat, and afterwards found a very large tortoife. The manner of my regulating my food was thus: A bunch of raisins served me for breakfast; a piece of goat's flesh or turtle broiled for my dinner, and two or three turtle eggs for my supper. While the rain lasted, I daily worked two or three hours at enlarging my cave, and by degrees worked it on towards one fide till I came to the outside of the hill, and made a door or way out; which came beyond my fence or wall, and fo I came in and out this way. But after I had done this, I was troubled to fee myself thus exposed, though I could not perceive any thing to fear, a goat being the biggest creature I had seen upon this island.

Sept. 30. Casting up my notches on my post, which amounted to 365, I concluded this to be the anniversary of my landing; and therefore humbly prostrating myself on the ground, confessing my sins, acknowledging God's righteous judgments upon me, and praying to Jesus Christ to have mercy on me, I fasted for twelve hours till the going down of the sun; and then eating a biscuit and a bunch of grapes, laid me on

the bed, and with great comfort took my night's repose. Till this time I never had distinguished the Sabbath day; but now, I made a longer notch than ordinary for the days of rest, and divided the weeks as well as I could, though I found I had loft a day or two in my account. My ink failing foon after, I omitted in my daily memorandum things of an indifferent nature, and contented myself to write down only the most remarkable events of my life. The rainy and dry feafons appeared now regular to me, and experience taught me how to provide for them; yet in one thing I am going to relate, my experience very much failed me. You may call to mind what I have mentioned of fome barley and rice which I had faved; about thirty stalks of the former, and twenty of the latter; and at that time the fun being in its fouthern position, going from me together with the rains, made me conclude it a very proper reason to sow it. Accordingly I dug up a piece of ground with my wooden spade, and dividing it in two parts, fowed about two thirds of my feed, preferving by me about a handful of each. And happy it was I did fo; for no rains falling it was choked up, and never appeared above the earth till the wet feafon came again, and then part of it grew as if it had been newly fown.

I was resolved still to make another trial; and seeking for a moister piece of ground near my bower, I there sowed the rest of my seed in February, a little before the vernal equinox, which having the rainy months of March and April to water it, yielded a noble crop, and sprung up very plea-

fantly.

f

F

H

fantly. I had still faved part of the seed, not daring to venture all; and by the time I found out the proper seasons to sow in, and that I might expect every year two seed-times and two harvests, my stock amounted to above half a peck of each

fort of grain.

d

h

le

ft

n

of

0

y

).

.

u

e

y

d

d

d

No fooner were the rains over, but the stakes which I had cut from the trees, shot out like willows the first year after lopping their heads. I was ignorant of the tree I cut them from; but they grew so regularly beautiful, that they made a most lively appearance, and flourished in three years time, that I resolved to cut more of them; and these soon growing made a glorious fence as afterwards I shall observe.

And now I perceived that the seasons of the year might generally be divided, not into summer and winter as in Europe, but into wet and dry seasons, as in this manner.

Half {February, March, April, Rainy, fun coming near the Equinox.

Half {April, May, June, July, August,} Dry, sun getting north of the line.

Half { August, September, October, } Wet, the sun being then come back.

Half { November, November, December, January, February, } Dry, fun running fouth of the

The wet feafons would continue longer or sherter as the winds happened to blow. having found the ill consequence of being abroad in the rain, I took care beforehand to furnish myfelf with provisions: and during the wet months fat within doors as much as possible. At this time I contrived to make many things that I wanted, though it cost me much labour and pains before I could accomplish them. The first I tried was to make a basket; but all the twigs I could get proved so brittle, that I could not then perform it. now proved of great advantage to me, that, when a boy, I took great delight in standing at a basketmaker's in the fame town where my father lived, to view them at work; and like other boys, curious to fee the manner of their working thefe things, and very officious to affift, I perfectly learned the method of it, and wanted nothing but the tools. And it coming into my mind, that the twigs of that tree of which I made my stakes might be tough as fallow, willow, or ofiers, growing in England, I refolved to make an experiment, and went the next day to my country-feat, and found fome fit for my turn; and after cuting down a quantity with my hatchet, I dried them in my pale, and, when fit to work with, carried them to my cave, where I employed myfelt in making feveral forts

of baskets, insomuch that I could put in whatsoever I pleased. It is true, they were not cleaverly made, yet they served my turn upon all occasions.

But still I wanted two necessary things. I had no cask to hold my liquor, except two rundlets almost full of rum, a few bottles of an ordinary size, and some square case bottles: neither had I a pot to boil any thing in, only a large kettle, unfit to make broth, or stew a bit of meat: I wanted likewise at the beginning of this dry season a to-bacco-pipe; but for this I afterwards found an ex-

pedient.

I kept myfelf employed in planting my fecond row of stakes. But remembering that when I travelled up to the brook, I had a mind to fee the whole island, I now resumed my intention, and taking my dog, gun, hatchet, two biscuit-cakes, a great bunch of raisins with a larger quantity of powder and shot than usual, I began my journey. Having paffed the vale where my bower flood, I came within view of the tea lying to the west; when it being a clear day I fairly descried land, extending from the W. to the S. W. about 10 or 15 leagues, as I concluded: but could not fay whether it was an island or a continent. Neither could I tell what this place might be; only thought it was part of America, and where I might have been in a miserable condition had I landed. Again, I considered, that if this was the Spanish coast, certainly one time or other, I should see some thip pass by; and if it was not, then it must be the Savage coast, between the Spanish country and Brazil, which abounds with cannibals or man-eaters

 \mathbf{F}_3

As I proceeded forward, I found this fide of the island much more pleasant than mine; the fields fragrant, adorned with sweet slowers and verdant grass, together with several very sine woods. There were parrots in plenty, which made me long for one to be my companion; but it was with great difficulty I could knock down one with my stick; and I kept him at home some years before I could get him to call me by my name.

In the low grounds, I found various forts of hares and foxes as I took them to be, but much different from those in England. Several of these I killed, but never eat them; neither indeed had I any occasion; for abounding with goats, pigeons, turtle, and grapes, I could defy Leadenhall market to furnish me with a better table. In this journey I did not travel above two miles a day, because I took feveral turns and windings to fee what discoveries I could make, returning weary enough to the place where I defigned to rest all night, which was either in a tree, or to a place which I furrounded with stakes, that no wild creature might suddenly surprise me. When I came to the sea-shore, I was amazed to see the splendour of it. Its strand was covered with shells of the most beautiful fish, and constantly abounding with innumerable turtles and fowls of many kinds, which I was ignorant of, except those called Penguins. I might have shot as many as I pleased, but was sparing of my ammunition, rather chusing to shoot a she-goat, which I did with much difficulty, on account of the flatness of the country.

Now, though this journey produced the most plea-

fing

ft

an

m

a

fing satisfaction, yet my habitation was so much to my liking, that I did not repine at my being feated on the worst part of the island. I continued my journey, travelling about twelve miles further towards the east, where I fet a great pile for a mark, concluding that my next journey should bring me to the other side of the island, east from my castle, and fo round till I came to my post again. As I had a constant view of the country, I thought I could not miss my way; but scarce had I travelled three miles, when I descended into a very large valley, fo furrounded with hills covered with wood, that I having no guide but by the fun, nor even then, unless I knew well the position of the fun at that time of the day; and to add to my misfortune, the weather proving very hazy, I was obliged to return to my post by the sea side, and so backwards the same way I came. In this journey my dog surprised a kid, and would have killed it, had I not prevented him. As I had often been thinking of getting a kid or two, and fo raising a breed of tame goats to supply me after my ammunition was spent, I took this opportunity of beginning; and having made a collar for this little creature with a string made of rope yarn, I brought it to my bower, and there inclosed and left him; and having spent a month in this journey, at length I returned to my old habitation.

No body can doubt of my fatisfaction, when I returned to my little castle, and reposed myself in my hammock. After my journey, I rested myself a week, which time I employed in making a cage for my pretty poll. I began to consider of the poor

kid I had left at the bower; and I immediately went to fetch it home. When I came there I found the young creature almost starved; I gave it some food, and tied it as before; but there was no occasion, for it followed me like a dog; and as I constantly fed it, it became so loving, gentle, and fond, that it commenced one of my domestics, and would never leave me.

a

n

h

g

th

be

pr

be

my

gra

wh

Pro

lan

der

of i

dail

hea

whi

Seel

took

mor

OB

The rainy weather of the autumnal equinor being now come, I kept the 30th of September in the most solemn manner as usual, it being the third year of my abode in the island. I spent the whole day in acknowledging God's mercies; in giving him thanks for making this solitary life as agreeable, and less sinful, than that of human society; and for the communications of his grace to my soul, in supporting, comforting, and encouraging me to depend upon his providence, and hope for his eternal presence in the world to come.

Indeed I often did consider how much more happy I was in this state of life than in that accursed manner of living I formerly used; and sometimes when hunting, or viewing the country, the anguish of my soul would break out upon me, and my very heart would sink within me, to think of the woods, the mountains, the deferts I was in; and how I was a prisoner locked up within the eternal bars and bolts of the ocean, in an uninhabited wilderness, without hopes, and without redemption. In this condition I would often wring my hands, and weep like a child: and even sometimes in the middle of my work this sit would take me; and then I would sit down and sigh, looking

13772

on the ground for an hour or two together, till such time as my grief got vent in a flood of tears.

One morning as I was fadly employed in this manner, I opened my Bible, when immediately I fixed my eyes upon these words, I will never leave thee, nor forfake thee! Surely, thought I, these words are directed to me; or elfe, why should they appear just at a moment when I am bemoaning my forlorn condition? and if God does not forfake me, what matters it, fince he can make me more happy in this state of life, than if I enjoyed the greatest splendour in the world? But while I was going to return God thanks for my present state, fomething feemed to shock my mind, as if it had thus faid: Unworthy wretch, can you pretend to be thankful for a condition, from which you would pray to be delivered! Here I stopt; - and though 1 could not fay, I thanked the divine Majesty for being there, yet I gave God thanks for placing to my view my former wicked course of life, and granting me a true knowledge of repentance. And whenever I opened or shut the Bible, I blessed kind Providence, that directed my good friend in England to fend it among my goods without my order, and for affifting me to fave it from the power of the raging ocean.

And now beginning my third year, my feveral daily employments were thefe. First, My duty to heaven, and diligently reading the holy scriptures, which I did twice or thrice every day. Secondly, Seeking provision with my gun, which commonly took me up, when it did not rain, three hours every morning. Thirdly, The ordering, curing, preserv-

ing, and cooking what I had killed, or catched for my fupply, which took me up a great part of the day: for in the middle of the day the fun being in its height, it was fo hot that I could not stir out; fo that I had only but four hours in the evening to work in: and then the want of tools, of affiftance, and skill, wasted a great deal of time to little purpofe. I was no less than two and forty days making a board fit for a long shelf, which two sawers, with their tools and faw-pit, would have cut out of the same tree in half a day. It was of a large tree, as my board was to be broad. I was three days in cutting it down, and two more in lopping off the boughs, and reducing it to a piece of timber. This I hacked and hewed off each fide, till it became light to move; then I turned it, made one fide of it smooth and flat as a board from end to end, then turned it downward, cutting the other fide, till I brought the plank to be about three inches thick, and smooth of both sides. Any body may judge my great labour and fatigue in fuch a piece of work; but this I went through with patience, as also many other things that my circumstances made necessary for me to do.

it

it

th

m

of

no

ma

ba

cro

and

pro

of

Ic

The harvest-months, November and December, were now at hand, in which I had the pleasing prospect of a very good crop; But here I met with a new missortune: for the goats and hares, having tasted of the sweetness of the blade, kept it so short, that it had no strength to shoot up into a stalk. To prevent this, I inclosed it with a hedge, and by day shot some of its devourers; and my dog, which I had tied to the field-gate, keeping barking

barking all night, fo frightened these creatures, that

I got entirely rid of them.

But no fooner did I get rid of these, than other enemies appeared, to wit, whole flocks of feveral forts of birds, who only waited till my back was turned to ruin me. So much did this provoke me, that I let fly, and killed three of the malefactors; and afterwards ferved them, as they do notorious thieves in England, hung them up in chains as a terror to others, And indeed so good an effect had this, that they not only forfook the corn, but all that part of the island, fo long as these criminals

hung there.

Van. 12.

My corn having ripened apace, the latter end of December, which was my fecond harvest, I reaped it with a scythe, made of one of my broad swords. I had no fatigue in cutting down my first crop. it was fo flender. The ears I carried home in a balket, rubbing it out with my hands instead of threshing it; and when my harvest was over, found my half-peck of feed produced near two bushels of rice, and two bushels and a half of barley. And now I plainly forefaw, that, by God's goodness, I should be furnished with bread. but yet I was concerned, because I knew not how to grind or make meal of my corn, nor bread, neither knew how to bake it. I would not however taste of any of the crop but refolved to preferve it against next season, and in the mean while use my best endeavours to provide myself with other food.

But where were my labours to end? The want of a plow to turn up the earth, or shovel to dig it I conquered by making me a wooden spade: the

want

want of a harrow, I supplied myself with dragging over the corn a great bough of a tree. When it was growing, I was forced to fence it; when ripe, to mow it, carry it home, thresh it, part it from the chaff, and save it. And after all, I wanted a mill to grind it, sieve to dress it, yeast and salt to make it into bread, and an oven to bake it. This set my brains on work to find some expedient for every one of these necessaries against the next harvest.

P

ti

2

po

th

tw

fire

top

fou

pet

star

clay

WOL

whi

ness

I for

And now having more feed, my first care was to prepare me more land. I pitched upon two large flat pieces of ground near my castle for that purpose, in which I sowed my seed, and senced it with a good hedge. This took me up three months; by which time the wet feafon coming on, and the rain keeping me within doors, I found feveral occasions to employ myself; and, while at work, used to divert myself with talking to my parrot, learning him to know and speak his own name Poll, the first welcome word I ever heard spoke in the island. I had been a long time contriving how to make earthen vessels, which I wanted extremely, and when I considered the heat of the climate, I did not doubt but if I could find any fuch clay, I might botch up a pot, strong enough when dried in the fun to bear handling, and to hold any thing that was dry, as corn, meal, and other things.

To be short, the clay I found; but it would occafion the most serious person to smile too see what awkward ways I took, and what ugly mishapen things I made; how many either fell out, or cracked cracked by the violent heat of the sun, and sell in pieces when they were removed: so that I think it was two months time before I could perfect any thing; and even then but two clumsy things, in imitation of earthen jarrs. These however I gently placed in wicker baskets, made on purpose for them, and between the pot and the baskets, stuffed it full of rice and barley straw: and these I presumed would hold my dried corn, and perhaps the meal when the corn was bruised. As for the smaller things, I made them with better success; such as little round pots, slat dishes, pitchers, and

pipkins, the fun baking them very hard.

Yet still I wanted one thing absolutely necessary, and that was an earthen pot, not only to hold any liquid, but also to bear the fire, which none of these could do. It once happened, that as I was putting out my fire, I found therein a broken piece of one of my veffels burnt hard as a rook, and red as a tile. This made me think of burning fome pots; and having no notion of a kiln, or of glazing them with lead, I fixed three large pipkins, and two or three pots in a pile one upon another. The fire I piled round the outfide, and dry wood on the top, till I faw the pots in the infide red-hot, and found that they did not crack at all; and when I perceived them perfectly red, I let one of them stand in the fire about five or six hours, till the clay melted by the extremity of the heat, and would have run to glafs, had I fuffered it; upon which I flacked my fire by degrees, till the redness abated; and watching them till the morning, I found I had three very good pipkins, and two earthen

t

n

earthen pots, as well burnt and fit for my turn as I could defire.

No joy could be greater than mine at this discovery. For after this, I may say I wanted for no fort of earthen ware. I filled one of my pipkins, with water to boil me some meat, which it did admirably well, and with a piece of kid I made me some good broth, as well as my circumstances

would afford me at that time.

The next concern I had was to get me a stonemortar to beat some corn in, instead of a mill to grind it. Here indeed I was at a great loss, as not being fit for a stone-cutter; and many days I spent to find our a great stone big enough to cut hollow and make fit for a mortar and strong enough to bear the weight of a pestle, that would break the corn without filling it with fand. But all the stones of the island being of a mouldering nature, rendered my fearch fruitless; and then I resolved to look out a great block of hard wood; which having foon found, I formed it with my axe and hammer, and then with infinite labour made a hollow in it, just as the Indians of Brasil make their canoes. When I had finished this, I made a great pettle of iron wood, and then laid them up against my fucceeding harvest.

My next business was to make me a sieve, to sift my meal, and part it from the bran and husk; having no fine thin canvas to search the meal through, I could not tell what to do. What linnen I had was reduced to rags: I had goats hair enough, but neither rools to work it, nor did I know how to spin it: At length I re-

membred

0

d

aı

CO

m pl

up

dia

ne

for

tim

ind

duc

mu

ly.

refe

Acie

had

membered I had some neckloths of callicoe or muslin of the sailors, which I had brought out of the ship, and with these I made three small sieves,

proper enough for the work.

I come now to confider the baking part. The want of an oven I supplied by making some earthen pans very broad, but not deep. When I had a mind to bake, I made a great fire upon my hearth, the tiles of which I had made myself; and when the wood was burnt into live coals, I spread them over it, till it became very hot; then sweeping them away, I set down my loaves, and whelming down the earthen pots upon them, drew the ashes and coals all around the outside of the pots to continue the heat; and in this manner I baked my barley-loaves as well as if I had been a compleat pastry cook, and also made of the rice several cakes and puddings.

It is no wonder, that all these things took me up the best part of the year, since what intermediate time I had was bestowed in managing my new harvest and husbandry; for in the proper season I reaped my corn, carried it home, and laid it up in the ear in my large baskets, till I had time to rub, instead of threshing it. And now indeed my corn increased so much, that it produced me about twenty bushels of barley, and as much of rice, that I not only began to use it freely, but was thinking how to enlarge my barns, and resolved to sow as much at a time as would be suf-

Acient for me for a whole year.

1

1

S

All this while, the prospect of land, which I had seen from the other side of the island, ran in

G 2

my mind. I still meditated a deliverance from this place, though the fear of greater misfortunes might have deterred me from it. For allowing that I had attained that place, I run the hazard of being killed and eaten by the devouring cannibals; and if they were not fo, yet I might be flain, as other Europeans had been, who fell into their hands. Notwithstanding all this, my thoughts ran continually upon that shore. I now wished for my boy Zury, and the longboat, with the shoulder of mutton fail: I went to the ship's boat, that had been cast a great way on the shore in the late storm. She was removed but a little; but her bottom being turned up by the impetuofity and fury of the waves and wind, I fell to work with all the strength I had, and with levers and rollers I had cut from the wood, to turn her, and repair the damages she had sustained. This work took me up three or four weeks, when finding my little strength all in vain, I fell to undermining it by digging away the fand, and fo to make it fall down, fetting pieces of wood to thurst and guide it in the fall. But after this was done, I was still unable to stir it up, or to get under it, much less to move it forwards towards the water. and fo I was forced to give it over.

This disappointment however did not frighten me. I began to think whether it was not possible for me to make a Canoe or Periagua, such as he Indians make of the trunk of a tree. But nere I lay under particular inconveniences, want of tools to make it, and want of hands to move

1

20

1

53

4

11

n

ai

1

rde L

al :

40

im:

ca

Ma

it in the water when it was made. However, to work I went upon it, stopping all the inquiries I could make, with this very simple answer I made to myself, Let's first make it, I'll warrant I'll find some way or other to get it along when it is done.

I first out down a cedar tree, which was five foot ten inches diameter at the lower part next the stump, and four foot eleven inches diameter at the end of twenty-two foot, after which it lessened for a space, and then parted into branches. Twenty days was I a hacking and hewing this tree at the bottom, fourteen more in cutting off the branches and limbs, and a whole month in shaping it like the bottom of a boat. As for the inside, I was three weeks with a mallet and chiffel, clearing it in such a manner, as that it was big enough to carry 26 men, much bigger than any canoe I ever saw in my life, and consequently sufficient to transport me and all my effects to that wished-for shore I so ardently desired.

Nothing remained now, but indeed the greatest difficulty, to get it into the water, it lying about 100 yards from it. To remedy the first inconvenience, which was a rising hill between this boat and the creek, with wonderful pains and labour I dug into the surface of the earth, and made a declivity. But when was this done, all the strength I had was as insufficient to move it, as it was when I attempted to move the boat. I then proceeded to measure the distance of ground, resolving to make a canal, in order to bring the water to the canoe, since I could not bring the canoe to the water. But as this seemed to be impracticable to myself

-

e

Γ,

1-

35

ut

nt

ve

myself alone, under the space of eleven or twelve years, it brought me into some fort of consideration; so that I concluded this also to be impossible, and the attempt altogether vain. I now faw, and not before, what stupidity it is to begin work before we reckon its costs, or judge rightly our own abilities to go through with its performance. Lattiew I make a that reduced beyon

In the height of this work, my fourth year expired, from the time I was cast on this island. At this time I did not forget my anniversary; but kept it with rather greater devotion than before. For now my hopes being frustrated, I looked upon this world as a thing I had nothing to do with; and very well might I say, as father Abraham said unto Dives, Between me and thee there is a gulf fixed. And indeed from the world I was seperated, from its wickedness too, having neither the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, nor the pride of life; I had nothing to covet, being lord, king, and emperor over the whole country I had in possession, without dispute, and without controul: I had loadings of corn, plenty of turtles, timber in abundance, and grapes above measure. What was all the rest to me? The money I had by me lay as despicable dross, which I would freely have given for a gross of tobacco-pipes, or a hand-mill to grind my corn: in a word, the nature and experience of these things dictated to me this just reflection. That the good things of this world are no farther good to us, than they are for our use: and that whatsoever we may heap up to give

(

1

1

1

g

g

170

·I

de

m

m Or others, we can but enjoy as much as we use, and

These thoughts rendered my mind more easy than usual. Every time I sat down to meat, I did it with thankfulness, admiring the providential hand of God, who in this wilderness had spread a table to me. And now I considered what I enjoyed, rather than what I wanted; compared my present condition with what I at first expected it should be; how I should have done, if I had got nothing out of the ship; that I must have perished before I had caught fish or turtles; or lived, had I found them, like a mere favage, by eating them raw, and pulling them in pieces with my claws, like a beast. I next compared my station to that which I deserved; how undutiful I had been to my parents; how destitute of the fear of God: how void of every thing that was good; and how ungrateful for those abundant mercies I had received from heaven, being fed, as it were, by a miracle, even as great as Elijah's being fed by ravens; and cast on a place where there were no venemous creatures to poison or devour me; in short, making God's tender mercies matter of great consolation, I relinquished all sadness, and gave way to contentment.

As long as my ink continued, which with water I made last as long as I could, I used to minute down the days of the month, on which any re-

markable thing happened. And,

e

S,

e.

d

e.

re

ld

יונו

ve

13

First, I observed, that the same day I forsook my parents and friends, and ran away to Hull, in order to go to sea, the same day afterwards in the

next

next year, I was taken and made a flave by the ale ejaculations. Sallee rovers:

That the very day I escaped out of the wreck of the ship in Yarmouth roads, a year after, on the fame day, I made my cscape from Sallee in my patron's fishing boat: wallood do apply bits your

And that on the 30th of September, being the day of the year I was born on, on that day twenty-fix years after, was I miraculously faved, and cast affrore on this illand, 143V over sow month soci

The next thing that walted after my ink, was the biscuit which I had brought out of the ship: And though I allowed myself but one cake a day for above a twelvemonth, yet I was quite out of bread for near a year, before I got any corn of

my own. I du bein t diet birow off word being

In the next place, my cloaths began to decay, and my linen had been gone long before. However, I had preferved about three dozen of the failors chequered thirts, which proved a great refreshment to me, when the violent beams of the fun would not fuffer me to bear any of the feamens heavy watch coats; which made me turn taylor, and, after a miferable botching manner, I made me a cap of goat-skins, with the hair outwards to keep out the rain; which indeed ferved me fo well, that afterwards I made me a waiftcoat and open-kneed breeches of the same: And then I contrived a fort of an umbrella, covering it with fkins, which not only kept out the hear of the fun, but the rain alfo. Thus being eafy and fettled in my mind, my chiefest happiness was to converse

tl

fo

ca

converse with God, in most heavenly and comfort-

able ejaculations.

For five years after this I cannot fay any extraordinary thing occurred to me. My chief employment was to cure my raisins, and plant my barley and rice, of both which I had a years provision beforehand. But though I was disappointed in my first canoe, I made it, at intermediate times, my business to make a second, of much inferior fize; and it was two years before I finished it. But as I perceived it would no-wife answer my defign of failing to the other shore, my thoughts were confined to take a tour round the island, to see what further discoveries I could make. To this intent, after having moved her to the water, and tried how she would sail, I fitted up a little mast to my boat, and made a fail of the ships fail that lay by me. I then made lockers or boxes at the end of it, to put in necessaries, provisions, and ammunition, which would preferve them dry either from rain, or the spray of the sea; and in the inside of the boat, I cut me a long hollow place to lay my gun, and to keep it dry made a flag to hang over it. My umbrella I fixed in a step in the stern, like a mast, to keep the heat of the sun off me. And now refolving to fee the circumference of my little kingdom, I victualled my ship for the voyage, putting in two dozen of my barley-bread loaves, an earthen pot full of parched rice, a little bottle of rum, half a goat, powder and shot, and two watch coats. It was the 6th of November, in the fixth year of my reign, or captivity, that I fet out on this voyage; which was much

much longer than I expected, being obliged to put farther out, by reason of the rocks that lay a great way in the sea. And indeed so much did these rocks surprise me, that I was for putting back, fearing that if I ventured farther, it would be out of my power to return; in this uncertainty I came to an anchor just off shore, to which I waded with my gun on my shoulder, and then climbing up a hill, which overlooked that point, I saw the sull extent of it and so I resolved to run all hazards.

In this prospect from the hill, I perceived a violent current running to the east, coming very close to the point; which I the more carefully observed, thinking it dangerous, and that when I came to it, I might be drove into the sea by its force, and not able to return to the illand; and certainly it must have been so, had I not made this observation; for on the other fide was the like current, with this difference, that it fet of at a greater distance; and I perceived there was a strong eddy under the land; fo that my chief business was to work out of the first current, and conveniently get into the eddy. Two days I staid here, the wind blowing very briskly E. S. E. which being contrary to the current, leaves a great breach of the fea upon the point; fo it was neither fit for me to keep too near the shore, on account of the breach; nor stand at too great a distance, for fear of the streams. That night the wind abating, it grew fo calm, that I ventured out; and here I may be a monument to all rash and ignorant pilots: For I was no sooner come to the point, and not above the boat's length from

fe

fe

fp

CC

W

ed

an

th

Do

from shore, but I was got into a deep water with a current like a mill, which drove my boat along so violently, that it was impossible for me to keep her near the edge of it, but forced me more and more out from the eddy to the left of me; and all I could do with my paddlers was useless, there being no wind to help me.

Now I began to look upon myself as quite lost, since as the current ran on both sides of the island, I was very certain they must join again, and then I had no hopes but of perishing for want in the sea after what provision I had, was spent, or before, if

afterm should happen to arise.

Who can conceive the present anguish of my mind at this calamity? With longing eyes did I look upon my little kingdom, and thought the ifland the pleafantest place in the universe. Happy, thrice happy defart, faid I, shall I never see thee more? Wretched creature! whither am I going? Why did I murmur at my lonefome condition. when now I would give the whole world to be thither again? While I was thus complaining, I found myself driven about two leagues into the fea; however I laboured till my strength was far fpent, to keep my boat as far north as possibly I could, to that fide of the current where the eddy lay on. About noon I perceived a little breeze of wind spring up from the S. S. E. which overjoy. ed my heart; and I was still more elated, when, in about half an hour, it blew a gentle fine gale. Had any thick weather fprung up, I had been lost another way: for having no compass on board, I hould never have found the way to steer towards. the

the island if once it had disappeared; but it proving the contrary, I set up my mast again, spread my sail, and stood away northward as much as I could to get rid of the current. And no sooner did the boat begin to stretch away, but I perceived, by the clearness of the water, a change of the current was near: for where it was strong the water was foul; and where it was clear, the current abated. To the east I soon saw, about half a mile, a breach of the sea upon some rocks, which caused it again to seperate; and as the main force drove away more southwardly, leaving the rocks to the north-east, so the other came back by the repulse of the rocks making a sharp eddy, which returned back again to the north-west with a very swift stream.

They who have experienced what it is to be reprieved upon the ladder, or to be faved from theives just going to take away their lives, or fuch as have been in the like calamities with my own, may guess my prefent excess of joy, how heartily I run my boat into the stream of this eddy, and how joyfully I spread my fail to the refreshing wind, standing chearfully before it with a fmart tide under foot. By the affiftance of this eddy, I was carried above a league home again when being in the neck of the island, betwixt the two currents, I found the water to be in a fort of a stand. About four o'clock in the afternoon, I reached within a league of the island, and perceived the points of the rock, which caused this distaster, stretching out, as I observed before, to the fouthward, which throwing off the current more fouthwardly, had occasioned another eddy to the north. But having a fair brilk gale, i

th

to

tha

clo

stretched a cross this eddy, and in an hour came within a mile of the shore, where I soon landed, to my unspeakable comfort; and after an humble prostration, thanking God for my deliverance with a resolution to lay all thoughts of escaping aside, I brought my boat safe to a little cove, and laid me down to take a welcome repose. When I awoke, I was considering how I might get my boat home; and coasting along the shore, I came to a good bay which ran up to a rivulet or brook, where sinding a safe harbour, I stowed her as safe as if she had been in a dry dock made on purpose for her.

I now perceived myself not far from the place where before I had travelled on foot; so taking nothing with me except my gun and umbrella, I began my journey, and in the evening came to my bower, where I again laid me down to rest. I had not slept long before I was awakened in great surprise, by a strange voice that called me several times, Robin, Robin, Robin Crusoe, poor Robin! Where are you, Robin Crusoe? where are

you? where have you been?

e

h

d

e

1

d

I being half asleep and half awake, I thought Idreamed that somebody spoke to me. But as the voice repeated Robinson Crusoe several times, being terribly affrighted, I started up in the utmost consusion; and no sooner were my eyes open, but I beheld my pretty Poll sitting on the top of the hedge, and soon knew that it was he that called me; for just in such bewaising language I used to talk and teach him, which he so exactly learned that he would sit upon my singer, and lay his bill close to my sace, and cry, Poor Robinson Crusoe, Where

where are you? where have you been? how came you here? and such like prattle I had constantly taught him. But even though I knew it to be the parrot, it was a great while before I could adjust myself; being amazed how the creature got thither, and that he should fix about that place, and no where else. But now, being assured it could be no other than my honest Poll, my wonder ceased; and reaching out my hand, and calling samiliarly Poll, the creature came to me, and perched upon my thumb as he was wont constantly prating to me, with Poor Robinson Crusoe, and bow did I come here and where had I been? as if the bird was overjoyed to see me; and so

I took him home along with me.

I was now pretty well cured of my rambling to fea; yet I could wish my boat, which had cost me fo much trouble and pains, on this side the island once more, but which indeed was impracticable. I therefore began to lead a very retired life, living near a twelvemonth, in a very contented manner, wanting for nothing, except conversation. As to mechanic labours, which my necessities obliged me to, I fancied I could upon occasion make a tolerable carpenter, where the poor tools I had to work withal, but good. Besides, as I improved in my earthen ware, I contrived to make them with a wheel, which I found much easier and better; making my work shapely which before was rude But I think I was never fo elevated with and ugly. my own performance or project, than for being able to make a tobacco-pipe; which though it proved an awkward clumfy thing, yet it was very found, and

01 60

€U

lt y

ing

the

tha

wh

ing

Im

and carried the smoke perfectly well, to my great satisfaction.

I also improved my wicker-ware, making me abundance of necessary baskets, which though not very handsome, were very handy and convenient to fetch things home in, as also for holding my

stores, barley, rice, and other provisions.

My powder beginning to fail, made me examine after what manner I should kill the goats or birds to live on, after it was all gone. Upon which I contrived many ways to insnare the goats, and see if I could catch them alive, particularly a she goat with young. At last I had my desire; for making pit-falls and traps, baited with barley and rice, I found one morning in one of them an old he goat, and in the other three kids, one male, the other two semales.

So Boisterous was the old one that I could not bring him away. But I forgot the proverb, That hunger will tame a lion: for had I kept him three or four days without victuals, and then given him some water, with a little corn, he would have been as tame as a young kid. The other creatures 1 bound with strings together; but I had great difficulty before I could bring them to my habitation. It was some time before they would feed; but throwing them sweet corn it so much tempted them, that they began to be tamer; from hence I concluded, that if I designed to furnish myself with goats slesh, when my ammunition was spent the tamely breeding them like a flock of sheep about my settlement, was the only method I could take. I concluded also must separate the wild from the tame, or else they H 2 wou'd JUO.

d

d

h

r; le

h

ıg

7.

d,

id

would always run wild as they grew up; and the best way for this, was to have some inclosed piece of ground, well fenced, either with hedge or pale, to keep them so effectually, that those within might not break out, or those without break in. Such an undertaking was very great for one pair of hands; but as there was an absolute necessity for doing it, my first care was to find a convenient piece of ground where there was likely to be herbage for them to eat, water to drink, and cover

to keep them from the fun.

Here again I gave another instance of my ignorance and inexperience, pitching upon a piece of meadow-land fo large that had I inclosed it, the hedge or pale must have been at least two miles about. Indeed had it been ten miles, I had time enough to do it in; but then I did not consider that my goats would be as wild in fo much compass as if they had had the whole island, and consequently as difficult for me to catch them. This thought came into my head, after I had carried it on, I believe, about fifty yards; I therefore altered my scheme, and resolved to inclose a piece of ground about 150 yards in length, and 100 in breadth, fufficient enough for as many as would maintain me, till fuch time as my flock increased, and then I could add more ground. I now vigoroufly profecuted my work, and it took me about three months in hedging the first piece; in which time ! tethered the three kids in the best part of it, feeding them as near me as possible to make them familiar; and indeed I very often would carry fome ears of barley, or a handful of rice, and feed them out

out of my hand; by which means they grew so tame, that when my inclosure was finished, and I had let them loose, they would run after me for a handful of corn. This indeed answered my end; and in a year and a half's time I had a slock of about twelve goats, kids and all; and in two years after, they amounted to 43, besides what I had taken and killed for my sustenance. After which I inclosed five several pieces of ground to feed them in, with pens to drive them into, that I might take them as I had occasion.

In this project I likewise found additional bleffings; for I not only had plenty of goats flesh, but milk too which in my beginning I did not so much as think of. And indeed though I never had milked a cow, much less a goat, or seen butter or cheese made, yet, after some essays and miscarriages, I made me both, and never afterwards wanted.

How mercifully can the omnipotent power comfort his creatures, even in the midst of their greatest calamities? What a bounteous table was here spread in a wilderness for me, where I expected nothing at first but to perish for hunger?

Certainly a Stoic would have smiled to have seen me at dinner. There sat my royal majesty, an absolute prince and ruler of my kingdom, attended by my dutiful subjects, whom, if I pleased, I could either hang, draw, quarter, give them liberty, or take it away. When I dined, I seemed a king, eating alone, none daring to presume to do so, till I had done. Poli, as if he had been my principal court-savourite, was the only person permitted to talk with me. My old, but faithful H 3 dog,

g e n

t

dog, now grown exceeding crazy, and who had found no species to multiply his kind upon, continually fat on my right hand; while my two cats fat on each fide of the table, expecting a bit from my hand as a principal mark of my royal favour. These were not the cats I had brought from the ship; they had been dead long before, and interred near my habitation by mine own hand. But one of them as I suppose, generating with a wild cat, a couple of their young I had made tame; the rest run wild into the woods, and in time grew so impudent as to return and plunder me of my stores, till such time as I shot a great many, and the rest left me without troubling me any more. In this plentiful manner did I live wanting for nothing but conver-One thing indeed concerned me, the want of my boat: I knew not how to get her round the island. One time I refolved to go along the shore by land to her; but had any one in England met fuch a figure, it would either have affrighted them or made them burst into laughter: nay, I could not but smile myself at my habit, which I think in this place will be very proper to describe.

The cap I wore upon my head was great, high, and shapeless, made of a goat's skin, with a slap or penthouse hanging down behind, not only to keep the sun from me, but to shoot the rain of from running into my neck, nothing being more pernicious than the rain falling upon the slesh in these climates. I had a short jacket of goats-skin, whose hair hung down such a length on either side, that it reached down to the calves of my legs. As for shoes and stockings, I had none, but made a re-

femblance

-1

-milit

A C

37 E

67/

femblance of fomething, I know nor what to call them; they were made like bulkins, and laced on the sides like spatterdashers, barbarously shaped like the rest of my habit. I had a broad belt of goat-Tkin dried, girt round me with a couple of thongs, instead of buckles; on each of which, to supply the deficiency of fword and dagger, hung my hatchet and faw. I had another belt, not fo broad, yet fastened in the same manner, which hung over my shoulder; and at the end of it, under my left arm, hung two pouches made also of goatsskin, to hold my powder and shot. My basket I carried on my back, and my gun on my shoulder; and over my head a great clumfy ugly goat-skin umbrella, which however, next to my gun, was the most necessary thing about me. As for my face, the colour was not fo fwarthy as the Mallattoes, or as might have been expected from one who took fo little care of it, in a climate within nine or ten degrees of the equinox. At one time my beard grew fo long that it hung down above a quarter of a yard; but as I had both razors and sciffars in store, I cut it all off, and suffered none to grow, except a large pair of Mahometan whifkers, the like of which I had feen worn by fome Turks at Sallee, not long enough indeed to hang a hat upon, but of fuch a monstrous fize, as would bave amazed any in England to have feen.

But all this was of no consequence here, there being none to observe my behaviour or habit.

And so without fear and without controul, I proceeded on my journey, the prosecution of which took me up five or six days. I first travelled along

0

9

n

n,

e,

the sea-shore, directly to the place where I first brought my boat to an anchor, to get upon the rocks. But having now no boat to take care of, I went over land a nearer way to the same height that I was before upon; when looking forward to the point of the rock, which lay out, and which I was forced to double with my boat, I was amazed to see the sea so smooth and quiet, there being no ripling motion, nor current, any more than in other places, This made me ponder some time to guess the reason of it, when at last I was convinced that the ebb fetting from the west, and joining with the current of water from some great river in shore, must be the occasion of these rapid streams; and that consequently as the winds blew more westwardly, or more southwardly, so the current came the nearer, or went the further from shore. To satisfy my curiosity, I waited there till evening, when the time of ebb being made, I plainly perceived from the rock the current again as before, with this difference, that it ran father off, near half a league from the shore; whereas in my expedition, it fet close upon it, furiously hurrying me and my canoe along with it, which at another time it would not have done. And now I was convinced, that, by observing the ebbing and flowing of the tide, I might eafily bring my boat round the island again. But when I began to think of putting it in practice, the remembrance of the late danger struck me with such horrer, that I changed my resolution, and formed another, which was more fafe, though more laborious; and this was, to make another canoe, and so have one

b

it

ol

fo

of

OI

f

fo

one for one side of the island, and one for the other.

I had now two plantations in the island, the first my little fortification, fort, or castle, with many large and spacious improvements: for by this time I had enlarged the cave behind me, with feveral little caves, one within another, to hold my baskets, corn, and straw. The piles with which I made my wall, were grown fo lofty and great as obscured my habitation. And near this commodious and pleasant settlement, lay my wellcultivated and improved corn-fields, which kindly yielded me its fruit in the proper season. My second plantation was that near my country feat, or little bower, where my grapes flourished, and where having planted many stakes, I made in-closures for my goats, so strongly fortified by labour and time, that it was much stronger than a wall, and confequently impossible for them to break through. As for my bower itself, I kept it constantly in repair, and cut the trees in such a manner, as made them grow thick and wild, and form a most delightful shade. In the centre of this stood my tent thus erected. I had driven four piles in the ground, spreading over it a piece of the ship's sail; beneath which I made me a fort of a couch with the skins of the creatures I had fain, and other things; and having laid thereon one of the failors blankets, which I had faved from the wreck of the ship, and covering myself with a great watch coat, I took up this place for my country-retreat.

Very frequently from this fettlement did I use

to visit my boat, and kept her in very good order. And sometimes I would venture in her a cast or two from shore, but no farther, lest either a strong current, a sudden stormy wind, or some unlucky accident, should hurry me from the island as before. But now I intreat your attention, whilst I proceed to inform you of a new, but most surprising scene of life, which here befel me.

t

Y

h

W

0

0

m

m

ho

no

W

acc

da

wh

in

had

hin

to

250

You may easily suppose, that, after having been here fo long, nothing could be more amazing than to see a human creature. One day it happened, that going to my boat, I faw the print of a man's naked foot on the shore, very evident on the fand, as the toes, heels, and every part of it. Had I feen an apparition in the most frightful shape, I could not have been more confounded. My willing ears gave the strictest attention. I cast my eyes aroud, but could fatisfy neither the one or the other. I proceeded alternately to every part of the shore, but with equal effect; neither could I fee any other mark, though the fand about it was as susceptible to take impression, as that which was so plainly stamped. Thus struck with confufion and horror, I returned to my habitation, frightened at every bush and tree, taking every thing for men; and possessed with the wildest ideas! That night my eyes never closed. I formed nothing but the most dismal imaginations, concluding it must be the mark of the devil's foot which I had feen. For otherwise how could any mortal come to this island? Where was the ship that transported them? and what signs of any other footsteps? Though these seemed very strong reasons

reasons for such a supposition, yet (thought I) why should the devil make the print of his foot to no purpose, as I can see, when he might have taken other ways to have terrissed me? Why should he leave his mark on the other side of the island, and that too on the sand, where the surging waves of the ocean might soon have erased the impression. Surely this action is not consistent with the subtilty of Satan, said I to myself; but rather must be some dangerous creature, some wild savage of the main land overagainst me, that, venturing too sar in the ocean, has been driven here, either by the violent currents or contrary winds: and not caring to stay on this desolate island, has gone back to sea again.

Happy indeed, thought I myfelf, that none of the favages had feen me in that place: yet I was not altogether without fear, lest, having found my boat, they should return in numbers and devour me, or at least carry away all my corn, and destroy my flock of tame goats: In a word, all my religious hopes vanished, as though I thought God could not now protect me by his power, who had so

wonderfully preferved me fo long.

What various chains of providence are there in the life of man? How changeable are our affections, according to different circumstances? We love to-day what we hate to morrow; we shun one hour what we seek the next. This was evident in me in the most conspicious manner; for I, who before had so much lamented my condition, in being banished from all human kind, was now even ready to expire, when I considered that a man had set his foot

foot on this desolate island. But when I considered my station of life, decreed by the infinitely wise and good providence of God; that I ought not to dispute my creator's sovereignty, who had an undoubted right to govern and dispose of his creatures as he thinks convenient; and that his justice and mercy could either punish or deliver me: I say, when I considered all this, I comfortably found it my duty to trust sincerely in him, pray ardently to him, and humbly resign myself to his divine will.

One morning, lying on my bed, these words of the sacred writings came again into my mind, Call upon me in the day of trouble and I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me. Upon this sentence, rising more chearfully from my bed, I offeredup my prayers in the most heavenly manner: and when I had done, taking up my Bible to read, these words appeared first in my sight. Wait on the Lord, and be of good cheer, and he shall strengthen thy beart: Wait, I say, on the Lord. Such divine comfort did this give me, as to remove all cause of sadness upon that occasion.

n

P

A

tir

no

mo

CO

nig

file

ing

del

tire hab

wie

and

- N. 1

Thus, after a world of apprehensions and fears, for three days and nights, I at last ventured out of my castle, and milked my goats, one of which was almost spoiled for want of it. I next (though in great fear) visited my bower, and milked my flocks there also; when growing bolder, I went down to the shore again, and measuring the print of the foot to mine to see perhaps whether I myself had not occasioned that mark, I found it much superior in largues; and so returned home, now absolutely

absolutely convinced that either some men had been ashore, or that the island must be inhabited; and therefore I might be surprised before I was a ware

I now began to think of providing for my fecurity, and revolved in my mind many different schemes for that purpose: I first proposed to cut down my inclosures, and turn my tame cattle wild into the woods, that the enemy might not find them, and frequent the island in hopes of killing the same. Secondly, I was for digging up my corn-fields for the very same reason. And, lastly, I concluded to demolish my bower, lest seeing a place of human contrivance, they might come farther, and find out and attack me in my little castle.

Such notions did the fear of danger fuggest to me; and I looked, I thought, like the unfortunate king Saul, when not only oppressed by the Philistines, but also forsaken by God himself. And it is strange, that a little before, having entirely resigned myself to the will of God, I should now have little considence in him, fearing those more who could kill this fading body, than he who could destroy my immortal soul.

1,

S,

ut

h

ny

nt

nt

elf

ch

ely

Sleep was an utter stranger to my eyes that night; yet nature spent and tired, submitted to a silent repose the next morning. And then, joining reason with my fear, I considered, that this delightful and pleasant island might not be so entirely forsaken as I might think; but that the inhabitants from the other shore might sail either with design, or from necessity, by cross winds; and if the latter circumstance, I had reason to be.

I

lieve they would depart the first opportunity, However, my fear made me think of a place for retreat upon an attack. I now repented that I had made my door to come out beyond my fortification; to remedy which, I refolved to make me a fecond one; I fell to work, therefore, and drove betwixt that double row of trees, which I planted about twelve years before, feveral ftrong piles, thickening it with pieces of timber and old cables, and ftrengthening the foot of it with earth which I dug out of my cave; I also made me seven holes, wherein I planted my muskets like cannon, fitting them into frames refembling carriages. This being finished with indefatigable industry, for a great way every where, I planted sticks of ofier like a wood, about twenty thousand of them, leaving a large space between them and the wall, that I might have room to fee an enemy, and that they might not be sheltered among the young trees, if they offered to approach the outer wall. And indeed scarce two years had passed over my head, when there appeared a lovely flady grove, and in fix years it became a thick wood perfectly impaffable. For my fafety I left no avenue to go in or out; inflead of which I fet two ladders, one to a part of the rock which was low, and then broke in, leaving room to place another ladder upon that; fo that when brook those down, it was impossible for any man to descend without hurring himself; and if they had, they would still be at the outfide of my outer wall. But while I took all these measures of human prudence for my own prefervation, I was not alrogether unmindful of other

th

of

no

mo

ha

tic

mi

other affairs. To preserve my stock of tame goats, that the enemy should not take all at once, I looked out for the most retired part of the island, which was the place where I had lost myself before mentioned, and there finding a clear piece of land, containing three acres, surrounded with thick woods, I wrought so hard, that, in less than a month's time, I fenced it so well round, that my stocks were very well secured in it, and I put here-

in two he-goats and ten she-ones.

0

1-

ıg

at

ok

of

er

All this labour was occasioned purely by my fearful apprehensions, on account of seeing the print of a man's foot. And not contented yet with what I had done, I fearched for another place towards the west point of the island, where I might also retain another flock. Then wandering on this errand more to the west of the island than ever I had yet done, and casting my eyes towards the fea, methought I perceived a boat at a great distance; but could not possibly tell what it was for want of my perspective glass. I considered then it was no strange thing to fee the print of a man's foot; and concluding them cannibals, bleffed God for my being cast on the other fide of the island, where none of the savages, as I thought, ever came. But when I came down the hill to the shore, which was the S. W. point of the island, I was soon confirmed in my opinion; nor can any one describe my horror and amazement, when I saw the ground spread with sculls, hands, feet, and bones of human bodies; and particularly I perceived a space like a circle, in the midst of which had been a fire; about which I conjectured

conjectured these wretches sat, and unnaturally sacrificed and devoured their fellow-creatures.

The horror and loathsomeness of this dreadful spectacle, both consounded my senses, and made me discharge from my stomach in an excessive manner. I then returned towards my habitation, and in my way thither shedding sloods of tears, and falling down on my bended knees, gave God thanks for making my nature contrary to these wretches, and delivering me so long out of their hands.

Though reason and my long residence here had affured me, that these savages never came up to the thick woody parts of the country, and that I had no reason to be apprehensive of a discovery; yet fuch an abhorrence did I still retain, that for two years after I confined myself only to my three plantations; I mean my castle, country-feat, and inclosure in the woods. And though, in process of time, my dreadful apprehensions began to wear away, yet my eyes were more vigilant for fear of being furprized, and I was very cautious of firing my gun, lest being heard by those creatures, they should proceed to attack me. I resolved, however, manfully to lofe my life if they did, and went armed with three pistols stuck in my girdle; which added to the description I have given of myself before, made me look with a very formidable appearance.

Thus my circumstances for some time remained very calm and undisturbed; and when I compared my condition to others, I found it far from being uniferable. And indeed would all persons

compare

6

PI

ho

an

CX

an

la

bu

gui

compare their circumstances, not with those above them, but with those innumerable unhappy objects beneath them, I am fure we should not hear those daily murmurings and complainings that are in the world. For my part, I wanted but few things. Indeed the terror which the favages had put me in fpoiled some inventions for my own conveniencies. One of my projects was to brew me some beer: a very whimfical one indeed, when it is confidered, that I had neither cafks sufficient, nor could I make any to perferve it in; neither had I hops to make it keep, yest to make it work, nor a copper or kettle to make it boil. Perhaps, indeed, after some years, I might bring this to bear as I had done other things. But now my inventions were placed another way; and day and night I could think of nothing but how I might destroy some of these cannibals, when proceeding to their bloody entertainments; and fo faving a victim from being tacrificed, that he might after become my servant. Many were my contrivances for this purpose, and as many more objections occurred, after I hatched them. I once contrived to dig a hole under the place where they made their fire, and put therein five or fix pounds of gunpowder, which would confequently blow up all those that were near it; but then I was loath to fpend fo much upon them, left it should not do that certain execution I could defire; and but only affright, and not kill them. Having laid this defign alide, l'again proposed to myself to lie privately in ambush, in some convenient place, with my three guns double loaded, and let fly at them in the midst I 3

g

.

ıt

h

lf

p-

n-

n-

m

36

re

midst of their dreadful ceremony; and having killed two or three of them at every shot, fall upon the rest suddenly with my three pistols, and not let one mother's fon escape. This imagination pleased my fancy so much, that I used to dream of it in the night-time. To put my defign in execution, I was not long feeking for a place very convenient for my purpose, where unseen I might behold every action of the savages. Here I placed my two muskets, each of which was loaded with a brace of flugs, and four or five smaller bullets about the size of pistol-bullets; the fowling-piece was charged with near a handful of the largest swan-shot; and in every pistol were about four bullets. And thus all things being prepared, no fooner would the welcome light ipread over the element, but like a giant refreshed with wine, as the scripture has it, would I iffue forth from my castle, and from a lofty hill, three miles distant, view if I could fee any invaders approach unlawfully to my kingdom. But having waited in vain two or three months, it not only grew very tiresome to me, but brought me into some consideration, and made me examine myself, what right I had to kill these creatures in this manner.

If (argued I to myself) this unnatural custom of theirs be a sin offensive to heaven, it belongs to the divine Being, who alone has the vindictive power in his hands, to shower down his vengeance upon them. And perhaps he does so, in making them become one another's executioners. Or if not, if God thinks these doings just, according to the knowledge

kowledge they conceive, what authority have I to pretend to thwart the decrees of providence, which has permitted these actions for so many ages, perhaps from almost the beginning of the creation? They never offended me, what right have I then to concern myself in their shedding one another's blood? And indeed I have fince known they value no more to kill and devour a captive taken in war, than we do to kill an ox or eat mutton. I then concluded, it necessarily followed, that these people were no more murderers, than Christians, who many times put whole troops to the fword after throwing down their arms. Again I confidered, that if I fell upon them, I should be as much in the wrong as the Spaniards, who had committed the greatest barbarities upon these people who never had offended them in their whole lives as if the kingdom of Spain was eminent for a race of men without common compassion to the miserable, a principal fign of the most generous temper. These considerations made me pause, and brought me to think I had taken wrong measures in my resolution; I now argued with myself, that it was better for me never to attack, but to remain undiscovered as long as possibly I could; that an opposite conduct would certainly prove destructive; for as it was scarcely to be supposed I could kill them all, I might either be overpowered by the remaining, or that fome escaping, might bring thousands, to my certain destruction. And indeed religion took their part so much, as to convince me how contrary it was to my duty to be guilty of fledding human blood, innocent as to me in particular,

11,

16

ht

ne

ia

of

to

ve

ice

ng

ot,

he

lar, whatever they are to one another; that I had nothing to do with it, but leave it to the God of all power and dominion, as I faid before, to do therein what feemed good to his heavenly wisdom. And therefore on my knees I thanked the Almighty for delivering me from blood-guiltiness, and begged his protection that I might never fall into their hands.

Thus giving over an attempt which I had rashly begun, I never ascended the hill on that occasion afterwards; I only removed my boat, which lay on the other fide of the island, and every thing that belonged to her, towards the east, into a little cove, that there might not be the least shadow of discovery of any boat near, or habitation upon the island. My castle then became my cell, keeping always retired in it, except when I went out to milk my the-goats, and order my little flock in the wood, which was quite out of danger; for fure I was, that these savages never came here with expectations to find any thing, and confequently never wandered from the coast; however, as they might have several times been on shore, as well before as after my dreadful apprehensions, I looked back with horror to think in what a state I might have been, had I fuddenly met them slenderly armed, with one gun only loaded with fmall shot; and how great would have been my amazement, if, instead of feeing the print of one man's foot. I had perceived fifteen or twenty favages, who having once fer their eyes upon me, by the swiftness of their feet, would have left me no possibility of escaping? These thoughts would fink my very foul, so that I would

P

th

on

pr

an

the

10.

would fall into a deep melancholy, till fuch time as the consideration of my gratitude to the Divine Being moved it from my heart. I then fell into a contemplation of the fecret springs of Providence; and how wonderfully we are delivered, when insensible of it; and when intricated in uncertain mazes or labyrinths of doubt or hesitation, what secret hint directs us in the right way, when we intended to go out of it; nay, perhaps, contrary to our business, sense, or inclination. Upon which, I fixed within me this as a certain rule, never to difobey those secret impressions of mind to the acting or not acting any thing that offered, for which I yet could affign no reason. But let it be how it will, the advantage of this conduct very eminently appeared in the latter part of my abode on this island: I am a stranger in determining whence these secret intimations of providence derive; yet methinks they are not only some proof of the converse of spirits, but also of the secret communications they are supposed to have with those that have not passed through the gloomy vale of death.

These anxieties of mind, and the care of my preservation, put a period to all suture inventions and contrivances, either for accommodation or convenience; I now cared not to drive a nail, chop a slick, fire a gun, or make a fire, lest either the noise should be heard, or the smoke discover me. And on this account I used to burn my earthen ware privately in a cave which I found in the wood, and which I made convenient for that purpose; the principal cause that first brought me here was to make charcoal, so that I might bake and dress

my bread and meat without any danger. At that time a curious accident happened to me, which I shall now relate. While I was cutting down some wood for making my charcoal, I perceived a cavity behind a very thick branch of underwood. Curious to look into it, I attained its mouth, and perceived it sufficient for me to stand upright in it. But when I had entered, and took a further view, two rolling thining eyes like flaming stars, seemed to dart themselves at me; so that I made all the haste out that I could, as not knowing whether it was the devil, or a monster that had taken his residence in that place. When I recovered a little from my surprise, I called myself a thousand fools, for being afraid to fee the devil one moment, who had now almost lived twenty years in the most retired solitude. And therefore refuming all the courage I had, I took up a flaming firebrand, and in I rushed again. I had not proceeded above three steps, when I was more affrighted than before; for then I heard a very loud figh, like that of a human creature in the greatest agony, succeeded with a broken noise refembling words half expressed, and then a broken figh again. Stepping back, Lord thought I to myself, where am I got? Into what inchanted place have I plunged myself, such as are reported to contain miserable captives, till death puts an end to their forrow? And, indeed in fuch a great amazement was I, that it struck me into a cold fweat; and had my hat been on my head, I believe my hair would have moved it off. But again encouraging myself with the hopes of God's protection,

CO

or

fin

th

de

mo

for

protection, I proceeded forward, and, by the light of my fire brand, perceived it to be a monstrous hegoat, lying on the ground, gasping for life, and dying of mere old age. At first I stirred him, thinking to drive him out, and the poor ancient creature strove to get upon his feet, but was not able; so I e'en let him lie still, to affright the savages should they venture into this cave. I now looked round me, and found the place but small and shapeless. At the surther side of it I perceived a fort of an entrance, yet so low, as must oblige me to creep on my hands and knees to it; so, having no candle, I suspended my enterprise till the next day, and then I came provided with two

large ones of my own making.

K

13

0

(e

1

d

b

nd

at

ld e-

ut l's

on,

Having crept upon my hands and feet through this strait, I found the roof rose higher up, I think about twenty feet. But furely never morral faw fuch a glorious fight before! The roof and walls of this cave reflected a hundred thousand lights to me from my two candles, as though they were indented with shining gold, precious stones, or sparkling diamonds. And indeed it was the most delightful cavity or grotto of its kind that could be defired, though entirely dark. floor was dry and level, and had a kind of gravel apon it; no naufeous venomous creatures to be feen there, neither any damp or wet about it. I could find no fault but in the entrance, and I began to think that even this might be very necessary for my defence, and therefore resolved to make it my most principal magazine. I brought hither two fowling pieces, and three muskets, leaving only five

five pieces at my castle, planted in the nature of cannon. In a barrel of gunpowder, which I took up out of the sea, I brought away about sixty pounds of good powder, which were not damaged; and these, with a great quantity of lead for bullets, I removed from my castle to this retreat, now fortisted both by art and nature.

I fancied myself now like one of the giants of old, who were said to live in caves and holes among the rocks, inaccessible to any but themselves, or, at least, most dangerous to attempt. And now I despised both the cunning and strength of the savages, either to find me out, or to hurt me.

But I must not forget the old goat, who caused my late dreadful amazement. The poor creature gave up its ghost the day after my discovery; and it being very difficult to drag him out, I dug his grave, and honourably intombed him in the same place where he departed, with as much ceremony as any Welch goat that has been interred about

te

ca

ap

of

gre

app

imp

pul

loo!

nex

load

myf

the high mountain Penmenmoure.

I think I was now in the twenty-third year of my reign, and my thoughts much easier than formerly, having contrived several pretty amusements and diversions to pass away the time in a pleasant manner. By this time my pretty Poll had learned to speak English, and pronounce his words very articulately and plain; so that for many hours we used to chat together after a very familiar manner, and he lived with me no less than twenty-six years. My dog, who was nineteen years old, sixteen of which he lived with me, died of mere old age. As for my cats, they multiplied

multiplied fo fast, that I was forced to kill or drive them into the woods, except two or three, which became my particular favourites. Besides these, I continually kept two or three houshold kids about me, whom I did learn to seed out of my hand, and two more parrots, who would talk indifferently, and call Robinson Crusoe, but not so excellently as the first, as not taking that pains with them. I had also several sea-sowls, which I had wounded and cut their wings; and growing tame, they used to breed among the low trees about my castle-walls; all which made my abode very agreeable.

But what unforeseen events suddenly destroy the enjoyments of this uncertain state of life, when we least expect them! it was now the month of December, in the southern solftice, and particular time of my harvest, which required my attendance in the fields; when going out pretty early one morning before it was daylight, there appeared to me, from the seasshore, a slaming light, about two miles from me, at the east end of the island, where I had observed some savages had been before, not on the other side, but to my great affliction it was on my side of the island.

Struck with a terrible surprise, and my usual apprehensions, that the savages would preceive my improvements, I returned directly to my castle, pulled up the ladder after me, making all things look as wild and natural as possibly I could. In the next place, I put myself in a posture of defence, loading my muskets and pistols, and committing myself to God's protection. I resolved to defend

K

myfelf

myself till my last breath. Two hours after, impatient for intelligence, I fet my ladder up to the fide of a hill, where there was a flat place; and then pulling the ladder after me, ascended to the top, where laying myfelf on my belly, with my perspective-glass, I perceived no less than nine naked favages fitting round a fmall fire, eating, as I supposed human flesh, with their two canoes haled on shore, waiting for the floods to carry them of again. You cannot easily express the consternation I was in at this fight, especially seeing them near me; but when I perceived their coming must be always with the current of the ebb, I became more easy in my thoughts, being very fully convinced, that I might go abroad with fecurity al the time of flood, if they were not before landed. And indeed this proved just as I imagined; for no fooner did they all take boat, and paddle away but the tide made north-west. Before they went off, they danced, making ridiculous postures and gestures, for above an hour, all stark naked; but whether men or women, or both, I could not perceive. When I faw them gone, I took two guns upon my flioulders, and placing a couple of pillols in my belt, with my great fword hanging by my fide, I went to the hill, where at first I made a discovery of these cannibals, and then faw there had been three canoes more of the favages on thore at that place, which, with the rest, were making over to the main land.

But nothing could be more horrid to me, when going to the place of facrifice, the blood, the Lones, and other mangled parts of human bodies

appeared

C

C

Si

C

d

n

th

ft

in

fl:

W

ui

appeared in my fight: and fo fired was I with indignation, that I was fully refolved to be revenged on the first that came there, though I lost my life in the execution. It then appeared to me, that the visits which they make to this island are not very frequent, it being fifteen months before they came again: but still I was very uneasy, by reason of the dismal apprehensions I had of their surprising me unawares; nor dared I offer to fire a gun on that side of the island where they used to appear, lest, taking the alarm, the savages might return with many hundred canoes, and then God knows in what manner I should have made my end. Thus was I a year or more before I ever saw any of these devouring cannibals again.

But to wave this, the following accident which demands attention, for a while cluded the force of my thoughts in revenging myfelf on those hea-

thens.

.

1

e

ot

0

of

le

re

n

re

On the 16th of May (according to my wooden calendar) the wind blew exceeding hard, accompanied with abundance of lightning and thunder all day, and succeeded by a very stormy night. feeming anger of the heavens made me have recourse to my Bible: whilst I was seriously pondering upon it, I was fuddenly alarmed with the noise of a gun, which I conjectured was fired upon the ocean. Such an unufual furpife made me flart up in a minute, when with my ladder ascending the mountain as before, that very moment a flash of fire presaged the report of another gun, which I presently heard, and found it was from that part of the sea where the current drove me K 2 away.

away. I could not but then think, that this must be a ship in distress, and that these were the melancholy fignals for a speedy deliverance. Great indeed was my forrow upon this occasion; but my labours to assist them must have proved altogether vain and fruitless. However, I brought together all the dry wood that was at hand, and making a pretty large pile, fet it on fire on the hill. I was certain they plainly perceived it, by their firing another gun as foon as it began to blaze, and after that, several more from the same quarter. All night long I kept up my fire; and when the air cleared up, I perceived fomething a great way at ea, directly east, but could not distinguish what it was, even with my glass, by reason the weather was so very foggy out at sea. However, keeping my eyes directly fixed upon it, and perceiving it not to slir, I presently concluded it must be a thip at anchor; and so very hasty I was to be satisfied, that, taking my gun, I went to the fouth-east part of the island, to the same rocks where I had been formerly drove away by the cutrent; in which time the weather being perfectly cleared up, to my, great forrow, I perceived the wreck of a ship cast away upon those hidden rocks I found when I was out with my boat; and which by making a kind of an eddy, were the occasion of my preservation.

Thus, what is one man's fafety is another's ruin: for undoubtedly this ship had been driven on them in the night, the wind blowing strong at E. N. E. Iad they perceived the island, as I now guessed they had not, certainly, instead of having fired their gams for help, they would rather have ventured

tured

th

6

ge

ot

to

ne

01

I then thought, that perhaps they had done for upon feeing my fire, and were cast away in the attempt; for I perceived no boat in the ship. But then again I imagined, that perhaps they had another vessel in company; which, upon signal saved their lives, and took the boat up; or that the boat might be driven into the main ocean, where these poor creatures might be in the most miserable condition. But as all these conjectures were very uncertain, I could do no more than commiserate their distress, and thank God for delivering me, in particular, when so many perished in the raging ocean.

When I confidered feriously every thing concerning this wreck, and could perceive no room to suppose any of them saved, I cannot explain by any possible force of words, what longings my foul felt upon this fight, often breaking out in this manner: O that there had been but two or three, may even one person saved, that we might have lived together, converfed with, and comforted one another! and fo much were my defires moved, that when I repeated these words, Oh! that there bad been but one! my hands would fo clinch together, and my fingers press the palms of my hands fo close, that, had any foft thing been between, it would have crushed it involuntarily, while my teeth would strike together, and set against each other fo strong, that it required some time for me to part them.

Till the last year of my being on this island, I never knew whether or not any had been saved out of this ship. I had the affliction some time

K 3

after

after, to fee the corpfe of a drowned boy come on shore, at the end of the island, which was next the thipwreck: there was nothing on him but a feaman's waistcoat, a pair of open-kneed linen drawers, and a blue linen shirt; but no particular mark to guess what nation he was of. In his pocket were two pieces of eight, and a tobaccopipe, the last of which I preferred much more than I did the first. And now the calmness of the fea tempted me to venture out in my boat to this wreck, not only to get fomething necessary out of the ship, but perhaps some living creature might be on board, whose life 1 might preserve. had fuch an influence upon my mind, that immediarely I went home, and prepared every thing necessary for the voyage, carrying on board my boat provisions of all forts, with a good quantity of rum, fresh water, and a compass: so putting off, ! paddled the canoe along the shore, till I came at last to the N. E. part of the island, from whence! was to lanch into the ocean; but here the currents ran fo violently, and appeared fo terrible, that my heart began to fail me; foreseeing that if I was driven into any of these currents, I might be carried not only out of the reach or fight of the island, but even enevitably lost in the boiling furges of the ocean.

to

W

er hi

th

ou

dr

ha

So oppressed was I at these troubles, that I gave over my enterprise, sailing to a little creek on the shore, where stepping out, I sat me down on a rising hill, very pensive and thoughtful. I then perceived that the tide was turned, and the flood came on, which made it impracticable for me to go out

out for fo many hours. To be more certain how the fets of the tides or currents lay when the flood came in, I ascended a higher piece of ground, which overlooked the sea both ways; and here I found, that as the current of the ebb set out close by the south point of the island, so the current of the flood set in close by the shore of the north side; and all that I had to do, was to keep to the north

of the island in my return.

a

0

11

That night I reposed myself in my canoe, covered with my watch-coat instead of a blanket the heavens being my tester. I set out with the first of the tide full north, till I felt the benefit of the current, which carried me at a great rate eastward, yet not with such impetuosity as before, as to take from me all government of my canoe; fo that in two hours time I came up to the wreck, which appeared to me a most melancholy fight. It feemed to be a Spanish vessel by its building, stuck fast between two rocks; her stern and quarter beaten to pieces with the fea; her mainmast and foremast were brought off by the board; that is, broken hort off. As I approached nearer, I preceived a dog on board, who feeing me coming, yelped and cried; and no fooner did I call him, but the spoor creature jumped into the fea, out of which I took him up, almost famished with hunger and thirst; fo that when I gave him a cake of bread, no ravenous wolf could devour it more greedily; and he drank to that degree of fresh water, that he would have burst himself, had I suffered him

The first sight I met with in the ship, were two men drowned in the cook-room or forecastle, inclosed

inclosed in one another's arms: hence I very probably supposed, that when the vessel struck in the storm, to high and incessantly did the waters break in, and over her, that the men not being able to bear it, were strangled, by the constant rushing in of the waves. There were feveral casks of liquor, whether wine or brandy I could not be positive, which lay in the lower hold, as were plainly perceptible by the ebbing out of the water, yet were too large for me to pretend to meddle with; like. wife I preceived feveral chefts, which I supposed to belong to the feamen two of which I got into my boat, without examining what was in them. Had the stern of the ship been fixed, and the fore part broken off, I should have made a very profperous voyage; fince, by what I after found in these two chests, I could not otherwise conclude, but that the ship must have abundance of wealth on board; nay, if I must guess by the course she steered, she must have been bound from the Buenos Ayres, or the Rio de La Plata, in the fouthern part of America, beyond the Brafils, to the Havanna, in the gulf of Mexico, and so perhaps to Spain. What became of the rest of her failors, I could not certainly tell; and all her riches fignified nothing at that time to any body.

Searching farther, I found a cask, containing a bout twenty gallons, sull of liquor, which, with some labour, I got into my boat; in a cabin were several muskets, which I let remain there; but took away with me a great powderhorn, with about four pounds of powder in it. I took also a fire-shovel and tongs, two brass kettles, a copper pot to

make

th

Ve fir

fo

pi

po

con

of

clot

fary

till

elev

war of go

fame

make chocolate, and a gridiron; all which were extremely necessary to me, especially the fire-shovel and tongs. And so with this cargo, accompanied with my dog, I came away, the tide serving for that purpose; and the same evening, about an hour within night, I attained the island after

the greatest toil and fatigue imaginable.

That night I reposed my wearied limbs in the boat; refolving the next morning to harbour what I had gotten in my new-found subterraneous grotto; and not carrying my cargo home to my ancient castle. Having refreshed myself, and got all my effects on shore, I next proceeded to examine the particulars; and fo tapping the cask, I found the liquor to be a kind of rum, but not like what we had at the Brasils, nor indeed near so good. At the opening of the chest, several things appeared very useful to me; for instance, I found in one a very fine case of bottles, containing the finest and best forts of cordial waters; each bottle held about three pints, curiously tipt with filver. I found also two pots full of the choicest sweetmeats, and two more which the water had utterly spoiled. There were likewise several good shirts, exceeding welcome to me, and about one dozen and a half of white linen handkerchiefs and coloured neckcloths, the former of which were absolutely necesfary for wiping my face in a hor day; and in the till, I found three bags of pieces of eight, about eleven hundred in all, in one of which, decently warpt up in a piece of paper, were fix doubloons of gold, and some small bars and wedges of the ame metal, which I belive might weigh near a pound.

d

h

re

k

ut

e-

to

ke

pound. In the other cheft, which I gueffed to belong to the gunner's mate, by the mean circumstances that attended it, I only found some cloaths of very little value, except about two pounds of fine glazed powder, in three flatks, kept, as I believe, for charging their fowling-pieces on any So that, on the whole, I had no great advantage by this voyage. The money was indeed as mere dirt to me, useless and unprositable, all which I would have freely parted with for two or three English pair of shoes and stockings, things that for many years I had not worn, except lately those which I had taken off the feet of those unfortunate men I found drowned in the wieck, yet not so good as English shoes, either for case or fervice. I also found in the seaman's chest about fifty pieces of eight in rials, but no gold; fo concluded that what I took from the first belonged to an officer, the latter appearing to have a much inferior person for its owner. However, as despicable as the money seemed, I likewise lugged it to my cave, laying it up securely, as I did the rest of my cargo: and after. I had done all this, I returned back to my boat, rowing or paddling her a ong till I came to my old harbour, where I care. fully laid her up, and so made the best of my way to my castle. When I arrived there, ever thing feemed fafe and quiet; fo that now my only bufinels was to repole myself after my wonted manner, and take care of my domestic affairs. though I might have lived easy, as wanting for nothing absolutely needful, yet still I was more vigilant than usual upon account of the favages, never

2

n

fi

ft

W

h

G

W

as

ate

my

never going much abroad; or, if I did, it was to the east part of the island, where I was well assured that the Savages never came, and where I might not be troubled to carry that heavy load of weapons for my defence, as I was obliged to do if

I went the other way.

as ed

I

er re-

av

ng ou-

an.

But

for

ore

ges,

ver

Two years did-I live in this anxious condition, in all which time, contrary to my former resolutions, my head was filled with nothing but projects and designs, how I might escape from this island; and so much were my wandering thoughts bent on a rambling disposition, that had I the same boat that I went from Salle in, I should have ventured once more to the uncertainty of the raging ocean.

I cannot however but consider myself as one of the unhappy persons, who make themselves wretched with their diffatisfaction with the stations which God has placed them in; for, not to take a review of my primitive condition, and my father's excellent advice, (the going contrary to which was as I may fay, my original fin), the following miftakes of the same nature certainly had been the means of my present unhappy station. What bufiness had I to leave a settled fortune and we'lflocked plantation, improving and increasing, where, by this time, I might have been worth a hundred thousand moidores, to turn supercargo to Guinea, to fetch negroes, when time and patience would have fo much enlarged my stock at home, as to be able to emp'oy those whose more immediate business it was to fetch then home, even to my own door.

But as this is commonly the fate of young heads,

fo a ferious reflection upon the folly of it ordinarily attends the exercise of future years, when the dear-bought experience of time teaches us repentance. Thus was it with me; but notwithstanding the thoughts of my deliverance ran fo strongly in my mind, that it feemed to check all the dictates of reason and philosophy. And now, to usher in my kind reader with great pleafure to the remaining part of my relation, I flatter myfelf it will not be taken amiss, to give him an account of my first conceptions of the manner of escaping, and upon

n

ha

th

bo

ani

thi

COL

me

WOI

H'OL

cou

grea

kno out

aue

H elt m

laex

what foundation I laid my foolish schemes.

Having retired to my castle, after my late voyage to the ship, my frigate laid up and fecured, as usual, and my condition the same as before, except being richer, though I had as little occasion for riches as the Indians of Peru had for gold, before the cruel Spaniards came among them, one night in March, being the rainy feafon, in the four and twentieth year of my folitude, I lay down to fleep, very well in health, without diftemper, pain, or uncommon uneafiness, either of body or mind; yet notwithstanding I could not compose myself to sleep all the night long. All this tedious while, it is impossible to express what innumerable thoughts came into my head. I traced quite over the whole history of my life in miniature, from my utmost remembrance of things till I came to this island; and then proceeded to examine every action and passage that had occured, fince I had taken possession of my kingdom. In my reflections upon the latter, I was comparing the happy posture of my affairs in the beginning

of my reign, to this life of anxiety, fear, and concern, fince I had discovered the print of a foot in the fand; that while I continued without apprehension. I was incapable of feeling the dread and terror I now fuffered. How thankful rather ought I to have been for the knowledge of my danger, fince the greatest happiness one can be possessed of is to have sufficient time to provide against it? How stupendous is the goodness of Providence, which fets fuch narrow bounds to the fight and knowledge of human nature, that while men walk in the midst of so many dangers, they are kept ferene and calm, by having the events of things hid from their eyes, and knowing nothing of those many dangers that surround them, till perhaps they are dissipated and vanish away.

When I came more particularly to confider of the real danger I had for so many years escaped; how I had walked about in the greatest security and tranquility, at a time, perhaps, when even nothing but the brow of a hill, a great tree, or the common approach of night had interposed between me and the destructive hands of the cannibals, who would devour me with as good an appetite, as I would a pigeon or corkieu; surely all this, I say, could not but make me sincerely thankful to my great preserver, whose singular protection I acknowledged with the greatest humility, and without which I must inevitably have fallen into the

quel hands of those devourers.

10

i

1

S

to

d,

In

n?

ng of Having thus discussed my thoughts in the clearelt manner, according to my weak understanding, laext proceeded to consider the wretched nature

L

of these destroying savages, by seeming, though with great reverence, to inquire, why God should give up any of his creatures to fuch inhumanity, even to brutality itself, to devour its own kind? But as this was rather matter of abstruse speculation, and as my miserable situation made me think this of mine the most uncomfortable situation in the world, I then began rather to inquire what part of the world these wretches lived in; how far of the coast was from whence they came; why they gentured over so far from home: what kind of boats conveyed them hither; and why I could not order myself and my business so, that I might be as able to attain their country, as they were to come to my kingdom?

But then, thought I, how shall I manage myself when I come thither; what will become of me if I fall into the hands of the favages; or how shall I escape from them, if they make an attempt upon me; and supposing I should not fall into their power, what will I do for provision, or which way, hall I bend my course? These counter thoughts threw me into the greatest horror and confusion imaginabe; but then I still looked upon my present condition to be the most miserable that possibly could be, and that nothing could be worse, except death. For (thought 1) could I but attain the flore of the main, I might perhaps meet with some relief, or coast it along, as I did with my boy Xury, on the African shore, till I come to some inhabited country, where I might meet with some relief, or fall in with some Christian ship that might take me in; and if I failed, why then I could

À

fte

Wa

ma

ele

Wit

to I

33 1

tho

and

my

perc

could but meet with death, which would put an end to all my miseries. These thoughts, I must confess, were the fruit of a distempered mind, an imparient temper made desperate, as it were, by long continuance of the troubles and the disappointments I had meet with in the wreck, where I hoped to have found some living person to speak to by whom I might have known in what place I was and of the probable means of my deliverance. Thus, while my thoughts were agitated, my refignation to the will of heaven was entirely suspended; so that I had no power to fix my mind to any thing, but to the project of a voyage to the main. And indeed to much was I enflamed upon this account, that it fet my blood into a ferment, and my pulse beat high, as though I had been in a fever, till nature being, as it were, fatigued and exhausted with the very thoughts of it, made me fubmit myfelf to a frient repose.

In such a situation it is very strange that I did not dream of what I was fo intent upon; but instead of it, my mind roved on a quite different thing, altogether foreign. I dreamed, that as I was issuing from my castle, one morning, as customary, I perceived upon the shore, two canoes, and eleven favages, coming to land, who had brought with them another Indian, whom they defigned to make a facrifice of, in order to devour; but just they were going to give the fatal blow, methought the poor designed victim jumped away, and ran directly into my little thick grove before my fortification, to abfcond from his enemies; when perceiving that the others did not follow him that L 2

d

ut

et

th

at

ıld

that way, I appeared to him; that he humbly kneeled down before me, feeming to pray for my affiftance; upon which I shewed him my ladder, made him ascend carried him to my cave and he became my my servant; and when I had gotton this man, I said to myself, Now surely I may have some hopes to attain the main-land; for this fellow will serve me as a pilot, tell me what to do, and where I must go for provisions; what places to shun, what to venture to, and what to escape. But when I awaked, and found all these inexpressible impressions of joy entirely vanished, I fell into the greatest dejection

of spirit imaginable.

Yet this dream brought me to reflect, that one fure way of escaping was to get a savage; that after I had ventured my life to deliver him from the bloody jaws of his devourers, the natural fense he might have of such a preservation, might inspire him with a lasting gratitude and most sincere affection. But then this objection reasonably interposed: How can I effect this (thought I) without I attack a whole caravan of them, and kill them all? why should I proceed on such a desperate attempt, which my fcruples before had fuggested to be unlawful? and indeed my heart trembled at the thoughts of fo much blood, though it were a means to procure my deliverance. 'Tis true, I might reasonably enough suppose these men to be real enemies to my life; men who would devour me, was it in their power, fo that it was felf-prefervation in the highest degree to free myself by attacking them in my own defence, as lawfully as if they were actually affaulting me: though all these things,

fa

th

things, I fay, feemed to me to be of the greatest weight, yet, as I just said before, the dreadful thoughts of shedding human blood, struck such a terror to my soul, that it was a long time before I

could reconcile myfelf to it.

It

e

15

nt

al

e,

1.

¿-

if

rs,

But how far will the ardency of desire prompt us on? For notwithstanding the many disputes and perplexities I had with myself, I at length resolved, right or wrong to get one of these savages into my hands, cost what it would, or even though I should lose my life in the attempt. Inspired with this sirm resolution, I set all my with at work, to find out what methods I should take to answer my design: this indeed was so difficult a talk, that I could not pitch upon any probable means to execute it: I therefore resolved continually to be in a vigilant posture, to perceive when the savages came on shore, and to leave the rest to the event, let the opportunities offer as they would.

Such were my fixed refolutions, and accordingly I fet myself upon the scout, as often as I could, till such time as I was heartily tired of it. I waited for above a year and an half, the greatest part of which time I went out to the west and south-west corner of the island, allmost every day, to look for canoes; but none appeared. This was a very great discouragement; yet though I was very much concerned, the edge of my desire was as keen as ever, and the longer it seemed to be delayed, the more eager was I for it: in a word, I never before was so careful to shun the loathing sight of these

L3

favages, as I was now to be with them: and I thought myself sufficiently able to manage one two,

or three favages, if I had them, so as to make them my entire slaves, to do whatsoever I should direct them, and prevent their being able at any time to do me a mischief. Many time did I use to please myself with these thoughts, with long and ardent expectations; but nothing presenting, all my deep projected schemes, and numerous fancies vanished away, as though, while I retained such thoughts, the decree of providence was such, that no savages were to come near me.

About a year and a half after, when I was ferioully musing of fundry other ways how I should attain my end, one morning early I was very much furprifed by feeing no less than five canoes all on shore together on my side the island, and the savages that belonged to them all landed, and out of my fight. Such a number of them disconcerted all my measures; for seeing so many boats, each of which would contain fix, and fometimes more, I could not tell what to think of it, or how to order my measures, to attack twenty or thirty men single handed: upon which, much dispirited and perplexed, I lay still in my castle; which however I put in a proper posture for an attack; and having formerly provided all that was necessary, was foon ready to enter upon an engagement, should they attempt it. Having waited for some time, my impatient temper would let me bear it no longer; I fet my guns at the foot of my ladder, and as usual ascended up to the top of the hill at two stages, standing however in such a manner that my head did not appear above the hill, so that they could not easily perceive me: and here, by the affistance

0

u

as

10

th

at

fp.

the

fan

vei

T

ed

pur

my

of t

WOL

for

of my perspective glass, I observed no less than thirty in number around a fire, feasting upon what meat they had dressed, how they cooked it, or what it was, I could not then persectly tell; but they were all dancing and capering about the slames, using many frightful and barbarous gestures.

But while with a curious eye I was beholding these wretches, my spirits sunk within me, when I perceived them drag two miferable creatures from the boats, to act afresh the dreadful tragedy, as I supposed they had done before. It was not long before one of them fell upon the ground, knocked down, as I suppose, with a club or wooden sword. for that was their manner; while two or three others went immediately to work, cutting him open for their cookery, and then fell to devour him as they had done the former; while the last unhappy captive was left by himself till such time as they were ready for him. The poor creature looked round him with a wishful eye, trembling at the thoughts of death; yet feeing himself a little at liberty, nature that very moment as it were inspired him with hopes of life; he started away from them, and ran with incredible fwiftness along the fands, directly to that part where my ancient and venerable castle stood.

You may well imagine I was dreadfully affrighted upon this occasion, when, as I thought, they pursued him in a whole body, all running towards my palace. And now indeed I expected that part of my dream was going to be fulfilled, and that he would certainly fly to my grove for protection; but for the rest of my dream, I could depend nothing

Y

1-

al

es,

ld

cs.

on it, that the favages would pursue him thither, and find him there. However, my spirits beginning to recover, I still kept upon my guard; and I now painly perceived there were but three men out of the number that pursued him: I was infinitely pleased with what swiftness the poor creature ran from his pursuers, gaining so much ground of them, that I plainly perceived, could he thus hold it for half an hour, there was not the least doubt but he would save his life from the power of his enemies.

Between them and my castle there was a creek; that very fame which I failed into with all my effects from the wreck of the ship, on the steep banks of which I very much feared the poor victim would be taken, if he could not fwim for his escape: but foon was I out of pain for him, when I perceived he made nothing of it, though at full tide; but with an intrepid courage fourred on by the fense of danger, he plunged into the flood, swimming over in about thirty strokes, and then landing, ran with the same incredible strength and swiftness as before. When the three pursuers came to the creek, one of them, who I perceived could not fwim (happily for his part), returned back to his company, while the others with an equal courage, but much less fwiftness, attained the other side, as though they were resolved never to give over their pursuit And now, or never, I thought was the time for me to procure me a fervant, companion, or affiftant; and that I was decreed by providence to be the instrument that should save this poor creature's life. I immediately descended my two ladders with the greatest

va

bo

pr

in

tio

juil

All

Aill

ed,

life

of n

wife

moti

mak

greatest expedition; I took up my two guns, which I faid before were at the bottom of them; and getfing up again with the same haste towards the hil, I made nearer the fea. In a word, taking a short cut down the hill, I interposed between the pursuers and purfued, hallowing aloud to the latter, who venturing to look back, was no doubt at first as much terrified at me as them. I beckoned to him with my hand to return back, in the mean time advancing towards the purfuers, and rushing on the foremost, I knocked him down with the flock of my piece, and laid him flat on the ground. I was very unwilling to fire, left the rest should hear, though at that distance I questioned whether they could or no; and being out of fight of the smoke, they could not easily have known what to make of it. The other favage feeing his fellow fall, stopped as if he had been amazed; when advancing towards him, I could perceive him take his bow from his back, and fixing an arrow to it, was preparing to shoot at me, and without dispute might have lodged the arrow in my breast; but in this absolutely necessary case of self-preservation, I immediately fired at him, and shot him dead, just as his hand was going to draw the fatal string. All this while the favage who had fled before flood still, and had the fatisfaction to fee his enemies killed, as he thought, who defigned to take away his life: so affrighted was he with the fire and noise of my piece, that he stood as it were like Lot's wife, fixed and immoveable, without either fense or motion. This obliged me to halloo to him again, making the plainest signs I could to him to draw nearer.

d

ıt

d

10

h

e.

ne

ly

le

ess

ey iit.

for

nt;

the

ife.

the

est

nearer. I perceived he understood these tokens. by his approaching to me a little way, when, as if afraid I should kill him too, he stopt again. Several times did he advance, and as often stop in this manner, till, coming more to my view, I perceived him trembling, as if he was to undergo the fame fate. Upon which I looked upon him with a fmiling countenance, and still beckoning to him; at length he came close to me, and kneeled down, kiffed the ground, laid his head upon it, and taking me by my foot, fet the same upon his head: and this, as I understood afterwards, was a token of fwearing to be my flave for ever. I took him up, and making much of him, encouraged him in the best manner I could. But my work was not yet finished; for l perceived the favage, whom I knocked down, was nor killed, bur stunned with the blow, and began to come to himself. Upon which I pointed to my new fervant, and shewing him that his enemy was not yet expired, he fpoke some words to me, but which I could not understand; yet being the first found of a man's voice I had heard for above twenty-five years, they were very pleasing to me. But there was no time for reflection now, the wounded favage recovering himself so far as to sit upon the ground, which made my poor prisoner as much afraid as before: to put him out of which fear, I prefented my other gun at the man, with an intent to shoot him; but my savage, for so l must now call him, prevented my firing, by making a motion to me, to lend him my fword, which hung naked in a belt by my side. No sooner did I grant his request, but away he runs to his enemy, and at o one

10

48

00

bи

and

MF

fol

mig he stan

mig

fign

app.

one blow cut off his head, as dexteroully as the most accomplished executioner in Germany could have done; for it seems these creatures make use of wooden swords made of hard wood, which will bear edge enough to cut off heads and arms at one blow. When this valorous exploit was done, he comes to me laughing, as a token of triumph, delivered me my sword again, with abundance of surprising gestures, laying it along, with the bleeding

and ghastly head of the Indian, at my feet.

0

15

f

e

e.

é

lit

as

h

th

1

ng

ng

nt

at ne

The greatest assonishment that my new fervant conceived, was the manner of killing the lavage at fuch a distance, without a bow and arrow: and fuch was his longing defire to know it, that he first pointed to the dead creature, and then made figns to me to grant him leave to go to him. Upon which I bid him go, and, as well ss I could, made him fensible I granted his request, But when he came there, how wonderfully was he struck with amazement! First he turned him on one fide, then on another, wondering he could perceive no quantity of blood, he bleeding inwardly; and after sufficiently admiring the wound the bullet had made in his breast, he took up his bow and arrows, and came back again; upon which I turned to go away, making many figns to him to follow, left the rest, missing their companions, might come in pursuit of him. And this I found he understood very well, by his making me, underfland that his defign was to bury them, that they might not be seen if it happened; and which by figns again I made him fensible I very much approved of. Immediately he fell to work, and never

never was grave-digger more dexterous in the world than he was; for in an instant, as I might say, he scraped a large hole in the sands with his hands, sufficient to bury the first in; there he dragged him, and without any ceremony he covered him over; in like manner he served the other: so that I am sure no undertaker could be more expert in his business; for all this was done in less than a quarter of an hour. I then called him away, and instead of carrying him directly to my castle at first, conveyed him to my cave on the further part of the island: and so my dream was not suffilled in that particular, that my grove should prove an asylum or sanctuary to him.

Weary and faint, hungay and thirsty, undoubtedly must this poor creature be, supported chiefly by that vivacity of spirit, and uncommon transports of joy that his deliverance occasioned. Here I gave him bread and a bunch of raisins to eat, and water to drink, on which he fed very chearfully, to his exceeding refreshment. I then made him a convenient bed, with a parcel of rice straw, and a blanket upon it (a bed which I used myself sometimes), and then pointing to it, made signs for him to lie down to sleep, upon which the poor creature went to take a welcome repose.

Indeed he was a very comely handsome young fellow, extremely well made, with strait long limbs, not too large, tall and well shaped, and, as near as I could reckon, about twenty-six years of age. His countenance had nothing in it sterce or surly, but rather a fort of majesty in his face; and yet, especially when he smiled, he had all the

fweetness.

0

fi

fo

ez

th

le

0

ha

W

pai

haj

ag

fer

laft

hou

mil

cave

mad his a sweetness and foftness of an European. His hair was not curled like wool, as many of the blacks are, but long and black, with the most beautiful, yet careless treffes spreading over his shoulders. He had a very high and large forehead, with a great vivacity and sparkling sharpness in his eves. His fkin was not fo tawny as the Virgmians, Brafilians or other Americans but rather of a bright dun o ive colour, that had fomething agreeable in it, though not very eafy to give a description of. His face was round and plump, with a small nose, very different from the flatnels of the negroes, a pretty small mouth, thin lips, fine teeth, very well fet, and white as the driven fnow. In a word, fuch handsome features, and exact fymmetry in every part, made me confider, that I had faved the life of an Indian prince, no less graceful and accomplished than the great Oroonoko, whose memorable behaviour and unhappy contingencies of life have charmed the world, both to admiration of his person, and compassion to his sufferings.

But let him be either prince or peasant, all my happiness centered in this, that I had now got a good servant, or companion, to whom, as he deserved, I was resolved to prove a kind master and lasting friend. He had not, I think, slept above an hour, when he awakened again, and while I was misking my goats hard by, out he runs from the cave towards me in my inclosure, and laying himself down on the ground in the lowest prostration, made all the antic gestures imaginable, to express his thankfulness to me for being his deliverer. I

M

confess.

e

v, lf

15

ne

g

ıg

as

of

or nd

he

es

confess, though the manner of his behaviour feemed to be ludicrous enough to occasion laugh. ter, yet I was fo very much moved at his affec. tion, so that my heart melted within me, fearing he might die away in excess of joy, like reprieved malefactors; especially as I was incapable either to let him blood, or administer physic. It were to be wished, that Christians would take example by this heathen, to have a lasting remembrance of the benefits and deliverances they have received, by the kind mediation and powerful interpolition of their benefactors and deliverers; and it would likewife be happy for mankind were there no occasion to blame many, who instead of thankfully acknowledging favours and benefits, rather abuse and contemn those who have been the instruments to fave them from destruction.

But leaving these just reflections, I return to the object that occasioned them: for my man, to conclude the last ceremony of obedience, laid down his head again on the ground close to my foot, and fet my other foot upon his head, as he had done before, making all the figns of subjection, servitude, and submission imaginable, to let me understand he would ferve me as long as his life endured. As I understood him in many things, I made him fensible I was very well pleafed with him; and in a little time I began to speak to him, and learn him how to talk to me again. In the first place ! made him understand his name was to be Friday, because it was upon that day I faved his life: then I taught him to fay Master, which I made him sensible was to be my name. I likewise taught him to say Yes and

n

h

lo

no

de

if

or

the

and No, and to know what they meant. I gave him some milk in an earthen pot, making him view me while I drank it before him, and soaked my bread in it; I gave him a cake of bread, and caused him to soak it likewise, to which he readily consented, making signs of the greatest satisfaction

imaginable.

it

15

28

d

All that night did I keep him there; but no fooner did the morning-light appear, when I ordered him to arife, and come along with me, with certain tokens that I would give him some cloaths like mine, at which he feemed very glad, being flark naked, without the least covering whatever. As we passed by the place where the two men had been interred, my man pointed directly to their graves, shewing me the marks that he had made to find them again, giving me to understand by figns, that we should dig them up, and devour them. At this I appeared extremely displeased, expressed my utmost abborrence, as if I should vomit at the apprehensions of it, beckoning with my hand to come away, which he did with the greatest reverence and submission. After this I conducted him to the top of the hill, to view if the rest of the favages were yet remaining there; but when 1 looked through my perspective glass, I could see no appearance of them, nor of their canoes; fo that it was very evident they never minded their deceased companions whom we had flain; which if they had, they would furely have fearched for, or left one boat behind for them to follow after they returned from their pursuit.

Curiofity and a defire of fatisfaction animating

me with courage to fee this scene of barbarity. I took my man Friday with me, putting a fword into his hand, with the bow and arrows at his back. which I perceived he could use very dexterously. cauling him to carry one gun for me, and I two for myse f; and thus equipped against all attacks, away we marched directly to the place of their bloody entertainment. But when I came there, I was fruck with the utmost horror at so dreadful a spectacle, whilft Friday was no way concerned about it, being no doubt in his turn one of these devourers. Here lay several human bones, there several pieces of mangled flesh, half eaten, mangled and scorched, whilst streams of blood ran promiscuously as waters from a fountain. As I was musing on this dreadful fight, Friday took all the pains he could by particular figns to make me understand, that they had brought over four prisoners to feast upon, three of which they had eaten up, and that he was the fourth, pointing to himself: that there having been a bloody battle between them and his great king, in the just defence of whom he was taken prisoner, with many others; all of these were carried off to different places, to be devoured by their conquerors; and that it was his misfortune to be brought hither by these wretches for the fame purpose.

After I was made sensible of these things, I caused Friday to gather those horrid remains and lay them together upon a heap, which I ordered to be set on fire, and burnt them to ashes: my man however still retained the nature of a cannibal, having a hankering stomach after some of the sless.

n

ti

I

d

flesh: but such an extreme abhorrence did I express at the least appearance of it, that he durst not but conceal it; for I made him very sensible, that if he offered any such thing, I would certainly shoot him.

This being done, I carried my man with me to my castle, and gave him a pair of linnen drawers, which I had taken out of the poor gunners cheft before mentioned; and which, with a little alteration, fitted him very well: in the next place, I made him a jerkin of goat-skin such as my skill was able to manage, and indeed I thought myfelf a tolerable good taylor. I gave him also a cap, which I made of a hare's skin, very convenient and fashionable. Thus being clothed tolerably well, my man was no less proud of his habit, than I was in feeing him in it. Indeed he went very awkwardly at first, the drawers being too heavy on his thighs, not used to bear any weight and the sleeves of the waistcoat galled his shoulders, and the infide of his arms; but by a little eafing where he complained they hurt him, and by using himself to them, at length he took to them very well.

d

n

d,

ft

at

re

is

as

se!

11-

1-

or

, 1

nd

ed

an

al,

he

h:

My next concern was where I should lodge him: and that I might do well by him, and yet be perfectly easy myself, I erected a tent for him between my two fortifications, in the inside of the last, and the out side of the first: and as there was an entrance or door into my cave, I made a in formal framed door-case, and a door to open on the inside; I barred it up in the night-time, taking in my ladders too; so that was my man to prove treacherous there could be no way to come at me in the inside of

M 3

my innermost wall, without making so much noise in getting over, that it must needs waken me; for my first wall had now a complete roof over it of long poles, spreading over my tent, and leaning up to the side of the mountain, which was again said cross with smaller sticks instead of laths, and thatched over a great thickness with the rice straw, which was as strong as reeds; and at the hole of the place, left on purpose to go in or out by the ladder, I had placed a kind of trap-door, which, if it had been attempted on the outside, would not have opened at all, but have fallen down, and made a great noise; and as to my weapons, every night I took them all to my bedside.

But there was no occasion for this percaution; for furely never mafter had a more fincere, faithful, and loving fervant than Friday proved to me. Without passion, sullenness, or design, perfectly obliging and engaging, his affections were as much tied to me, as those of a child to his parents; and I might venture to fay, he would have facrificed his life for the faving mine, upon any occasion whatfoever. And indeed the many testimonies he gave me of this fufficiently convinced me that I had no occasion to use these precautions. here I could not but reflect, with great wonder, that however it has pleased the Almighty in his providence, and in the government of the creation, to take from fo great a part of the world of his creatures, the noblest uses to which their faculties, and the powers of their fouls are adapted; yet that he has bestowed, upon them the same reason, affections fentiments of kindness, and obligation, passions of resentment, sincerity, sidelity, and all the capacities.

ti

tl

f

eapacities of doing and receiving good that he has given us; and that when he is graciously pleased to offer them occasions of exerting these, they are as ready, nay more ready, to apply them to the proper uses for which they were bestowed, than we often are. These thoughts would make me melancholy, especially when I considered, how mean a use we make of all these, even though we have these powers enlightned by the Holy Spirit of God, and by the knowledge of his word, as an addition to our understanding, and why it has pleased the heavenly wisdom to conceal the like faving knowledge from fo many millions of fouls, who would certainly make a much better use of it than generally mankind do at this time. These reflection would fometimes lead me fo far, as to invade the fovereignty of providence and as itwere arraign the justice of such an arbitrary disposition of things, that should obscure that light from some, and reveal it to others, and yet expect a like duty from all. But I closed it up, checking my thoughts with this conclusion; first, That we were ignorant of that right and law by which thete should be condemned; but that as the Almighty was necessarily, and by the nature of his essence, infinitely just and holy; so it could not be otherwife, but that it these creatures were all destined to absence from himself, it was on account of finning against that light, which as the scripture fays, was a law to themselves, and by such rules as their consciences would acknowledge to be just, though the first foundation was not discovered to us. And fecondly, That still as we were the clay in the hand

h

d

n

8

it

d

r, is

aof

S,

at n,

n,

es.

hand of the potter, no vessel could thus say to him, Why hast thou fashioned me after this man. ner?

I had not been above two or three days return. ed to my castle, but my chief design was, how I should bring Friday off from his horrid way of feeding; and to take from him that inhuman relish he by nature had been accustomed to, I thought it my duty to let him tafte other flesh, which might the rather tempt him to the fame abhorrence I so often expressed against their accurfed way of living. Upon which one morning I took him out with me, with an intention to kill a kid out of the flock, and bring it home, and dress it. As I was going, I perceived a shegoat lying down in the shade, and two young kids fitting by her. Immediately I catched hold of my man Friday, and bidding him stand still, and not stir, I persented my piece, and shot one of the kids. My poor fervant, who had at a distance perceived me kill his adversary, and yet did not know by what means, or how it was done, flood trembling and furprised, and looked so amazed, that I thought he would have funk into the earth. He did not fee the kid I aimed at, or behold I had killed it; for coming to me he fell on his knees, earnestly pronouncing many things which I did not understand the meaning of; which at length I perceived was, that I would not take away his life.

Indeed I was much concerned to see him in that condition, where nature is upon the severest trial, when the immediate hand of death is ready to put

1-

of

0

gd

C

a

C

13

I

h

9

t

1

r

for ever a period to this mortal life: and indeed fo much compalion had to this creature, that it was with difficulty I retrained from tears. But however, as another fort of countenance was neceffary, and to convince him that I would do him no harm, I took him, finiling, by the hand, then laughed at him, and pointing to the kid which I had flain, made figns to him to fetch it, which accordingly he did. No less curious was he in viewing how the creature was killed, than he had been before in beholding the Indian; which while he was admiring, I charged my gun again, and presently perceived a great fowl like a hawk, perching upon a tree within shot; and therefore to let Friday understand what I was going to do, I called him to me again, pointing at the fowl, which I found to be a parrot. I made him understand that I would shoot and kill that bird; accordingly I fired, and bade him look, when immediately he faw the parrot fall down. Again he flood like one amazed, notwithstanding all I had said to him; and the more confounded he was, because he did not perceive me put any thing into my gun. Undoubtedly athing fo utterly strange, carrying death along with it, far or near, either to man or beast, must certainly create the greatest astonishment to one who never had heard of fuch a thing in his whole life: and really his amazement continued fo long, that had I allowed it, he would have proftrated himself before me and my gun, with the greatest worship and adoration. As for the gun in particular, he would not fo much as fuffer his fingers to. touch it for feveral days after; but would come and .

and communicate his thoughts to it, and talk to it, as if the senseless piece had understood and answered him; all this I could perceive him do, when he thought my back was turned, the chief intent of which was, to desire it not to kill him, as I afterwards came to understand.

I never strove to prevent his admiration, nor hinder him from those comical gestures he used on fuch occasions; but when his astonishment was a little over, I made tokens to him to run and fetch the parrot that I had shot; which he accordingly did, staying some time longer than tisual, by reason the bird, not being quite dead, had fluttered some way farther from the place where she fell. In the mean time, as he was looking for her, I took the advantage of charging my gun again, that fol might be ready for any other mark that offered; but nothing more occurred at that time. brought home the kid, and the same evening took off the skin, and divided the carcase as well as I could. Part of this flesh I stewed and boiled, in a pot I had for this purpose. And then spreading my table, I fat down, giving my man fome of it to eat, who was wonderfully pleafed, and feemed to like it very well; but what was most surprising to him, was to fee me eat falt with it: upon which he made me to understand, that the falt was very bad for me; when putting a little into his mouth, he feemed to nauseate it in such a manner, as to spit and sputter at it, and then washed his mouth with fresh water: but to shew him how contrary his opinion was to mine, I put fome meat into my mouth without falt, and feigned to spit and sputter n

q

Te A

of

211

fai

CT

qu

WE

10

his

Wa

ing

efp

tha

flef

to 1

COL

don

qui

Io

fan

as much for want of it, as he had done at it: yet all this proved of no fignification to Friday; and it was a ong time before he could endure falt in his meat or broth, and even then but a very finall

quantity.

n

e

I

1;

1

k

I

a

ıg

to

to

to

he

ad

he

pit

th

nis

ny

er

as

Thus having fed him sufficiently with boiled meat and broth at that time, the next day I was resolved to feast him with a roasted piece of the kid. And having no spit to fasten it, nor jack to turn it, I made use of that common artifice, which many of the people of England have, that is, to fet two poles upon each fide of the fire, and one crofs on the top, hanging the meat thereon with a string, and fo turning round continually, roaft it in the fame manner as we read bloody tyrants of old cruelly roafted the holy marryrs. This practice caused great admiration in my man Friday, being quite another way than that to which the favages were accustomed. But when he came to taste the sweetness and tenderness of the flesh, he expressed his entire satisfaction above a thousand different ways. And as I could not but understand his meaning, you may be fure I was as wonderfully pleafed, especially when he made it also very plain to me, that he would never, while he lived, eat man's flesh more.

It was now high time I should set my servant to work; so next day I put him to beat out some corn, and sift it in the same manner as I had done before. And really the fellow was very quick and handy in the execution of any thing I ordered him to go about. I made him understand that it was to make bread for us to eat,

and

and communicate his thoughts to it, and talk to it, as if the senseless piece had understood and answered him; all this I could perceive him do, when he thought my back was turned, the chief intent of which was, to desire it not to kill him, as I afterwards came to understand.

I never strove to prevent his admiration, nor hinder him from those comical gestures he used on fuch occasions; but when his astonishment was a little over. I made tokens to him to run and fetch the parrot that I had shot; which he accordingly did, staying some time longer than tisual, by reason the bird, not being quite dead, had fluttered fome way farther from the place where she fell. In the mean time, as he was looking for her, I took the advantage of charging my gun again, that fo I might be ready for any other mark that offered; but nothing more occurred at that time. So I brought home the kid, and the same evening took off the skin, and divided the carcase as well as I could. Part of this flesh I stewed and boiled, in a pot I had for this purpose. And then spreading my table, I fat down, giving my man fome of it to eat, who was wonderfully pleased, and seemed to like it very well; but what was most surprising to him, was to fee me eat falt with it: upon which he made me to understand, that the falt was very bad for me; when putting a little into his mouth, he feemed to nauseate it in fuch a manner, as to spit and sputter at it, and then washed his mouth with fresh water: but to shew him how contrary his opinion was to mine, I put fome meat into my mouth without falt, and feigned to spit and sputter

as much for want of it, as he had done at it: yet all this proved of no fignification to Friday; and it was a ong time before he could endure falt in his meat or broth, and even then but a very finall

quantity.

t

S

Thus having fed him sufficiently with boiled meat and broth at that time, the next day I was resolved to feast him with a roasted piece of the kid. And having no spit to fasten it, nor jack to turn it, I made use of that common artifice, which many of the people of England have, that is, to fet two poles upon each fide of the fire, and one cross on the top, hanging the meat thereon with a ftring, and fo turning round continually, roaft it in the fame manner as we read bloody tyrants of old cruelly roasted the holy marryrs. This practice caused great admiration in my man Friday, being quite another way than that to which the favages were accustomed. But when he came to taste the sweetness and tenderness of the flesh, he expressed his entire satisfaction above a thousand different ways. And as I could not but understand his meaning, you may be fure I was as wonderfully pleafed, especially when he made it also very plain to me, that he would never, while he lived, eat man's flesh more.

It was now high time I should set my servant to work; so next day I put him to beat out some corn, and sift it in the same manner as I had done before. And really the fellow was very quick and handy in the execution of any thing I ordered him to go about. I made him understand that it was to make bread for us to eat,

and

and afterwards let him see me bake it. In short, he did every thing as I ordered him in a little time

as well as could perform it myfeit.

But now considering that I had two mouths to feed instead of one, it was necessary that I must provide more ground for my harvest, and plant a larger quantity of corn than I commonly used to do; upon which I marked out a large piece of land, fencing it in, in the fame manner as I had done before; in the execution of which I must give Friday this good word, that no man could work more hardy or with better will than he did: and when I made him fensibe that it was for bread to ferve him as well as me, he then very passionately made me understand, that he thought I had much more labour on his account, than I had for myfelf; and that no pains or diligence should be wanting in him, if I would but direct him in those works wherein he mhight proceed.

I must certainly own that this was, the most pleasant year I ever had in the island; for after some time Friday began to talk pretty well, and understand the names of those things which I was wont to call for, and the places where I used to send him. So that my long silent tongue, which had been useless so many years, except in an exclamatory manner, either for deliverance or blessings, now began to be occupied in teaching, and talking to my man Friday; for indeed I had such a singular satisfaction in the fellow himself, so innocent did his simple and unseigned honesty appear more and more to me every day, that I really began

began entirely to love him: and for his part, I believe there was no love loft, and that his nature had been more charmed with my exceeding kindness, and his affections more placed upon me, than any other object whatfoever among his own countrymen. I once had a great mind to try if he had any hankering inclination to his own country again: and by this time having learned him English so well, that he could give me tolerable anfwers to any question which I demanded, I asked him, whether that nation to which he belonged, ever conquered in battle. This question made Friday to smile, and to which he answered, Yes, yes, we always fight the better; as much as to fay, they always got the better in fight. Upon which we proceeded on the following discourse. You fay, faid I, that you always fight the better; why then, Friday, how came you to be taken prisoner?

Friday. But for all that my nation beat much. Master. How, say you, beat! If your nation beat

them, how came you to be taken?

Friday. They more many mans in the place where me was, they take one, two, three, and me; my nation much over beat them in the yonder place where me no was, there my nation mans beat one, two, three great tousand.

Master. Then why did not your men recover

you from the hands of your enemies?

n

Friday. They run one, two, or three, and me! they make all go in the canoe; my nation have no canoe that time.

Master. 'Tis very well, Friday; but what does your nation do with the pri oners they take; Do

they carry them away and eat them as these have done?

Friday. Yes, yes, my nation eat mans too, eat up all.

Master. To what place do they carry them to be devoured?

Friday. Go to other nations where they think. Master. Do they bring them hither?

Friday. Yes, come over hither, come over other place.

Master. And have you been with them here,

Friday?

Friday. Yes, me been here, (pointing to the north-west of the island, being the side where they

used to land.)

Thus having got what account I could from my man, I plainly understood, that he had been as bad as any of the rest of the cannibals, having been formerly among the savages who used to come on shore on the farthest part of the island, upon the same bloody occasions as he was brought thither for and some time after I carried him to that place where he pointed; and no sooner did he come there, but he presently knew the ground, signifying to me that he was once there when they are up twenty men, two women, and a young child: but as he could not explain the number in English, he did it by so many stones in a row, making a sign to me to count them.

This paffage I have the rather mentioned, because it led to things more important and useful for me to know: for after I had this satisfactory discourse with him, my next question was, how far

it was from the island to the shore, and whether the canoes were not often loft in the ocean? to which he answered, there was no danger; that no canoes were ever loft; but that after a little way out of the sea, there was a strong current, and a wind always one way in the afternoon. This I thought at first to be no more than the sets of the tide, of going out or coming in; but I afterwards understood it was occasioned by the great draught and reflux of the mighty river Oroonoko, in the mouth or gulf of which I imagined my kingdom lay; and that the land which I perceived to the W. and N. W. must be the great island . Trinidad, on the north of the river. A thousand questions (if that would fatisfy me) did I ask Friday about the nature of the country, the fea, the coasts, the inhabitants, and what nations were nearest them; to which questions the poor fellow declared all he knew, with the greatest openness and utmost fincerity. When I demanded of him the particular names of the various nations of his fort of people, he could only answer me in general, that they were called Carabe. Hence it was I considered, that these must be Caribbees so much taken notice of by our maps, to be on that part of America, which reaches from the mouth of the river Oroonoko to Gutania, and so on to St. Martha. Then Friday proceeded to tell me, that up a great way beyond the moon, as much as to fay, beyond the fetting of the moon, which must be W. from their country. there dwelt white-bearded men, such as I was pointing to my whiskers, and that they kill much mans. I was not ignorant with what barbarity the N 2 Spaniards

Spaniards treated these creatures; so that I prefently concluded it must be them, whose cruelties had spread throughout America, to be remembered

even to fucceeding generations.

Well, you may be fure, this knowledge which the impertect information of my man had led me to, was very comfortable to me, and made me fo curious as to alk him, how I might depart from this illand, and get among those white men? He to'd me, Tes, yes, I might go in two canoes. In two canoes, thought I, what does my man mean? Surely he means one for himself, and another for me; and if not, how must two canoes hold me, without being joined, or one part of my body being put in one, and another in the other? And indeed it was a long while before I understood his meaning, which was, that it must be a large boat, as big as two canoes, able to bear with the waves, and not so liable to be overwhelmed as one must be.

I believe there is no state of life but what may be happy, if people would but endeavour for their part to make it so. He is not the happiest man that has the most riches, but he that is content with what he hath. Before I had my servant I thought myself miserable till I had him; and now that I enjoyed the happy benefits of him, I still complained, and begged a deliverance from a place of retirement, ease, and plenty, where Providence had sufficiently blessed me. In a word, from this time I entertained some hopes, that one time or other I might find an opportunity to make my escape from this island and that this poor savage might be a great furtherance thereto.

All

All the time fince my man became fo intelligent as to understand and speak to me, I spared no pains nor diligence to instruct him, according to my poor share of knowledge, in the principles of religion, and the adoration that he ought to pay to the true God. One time, as I very well remember, I asked him who made him? At first the innocent creature did not understand what I meant, but rather thought I asked him who was his father? Upon which I took another way to make him fensible, by demanding from him an answer to this question. Friday, (faid I), who is it that made the fea, this ground whereon we walk, and all these hills and woods which we behold? And here indeed I did not miss of my intention; for he told me is was old Benamuckee (the God whom I supposed these savages adored) who lived a great way beyond all. But as for his attributes poor Friday was an utter stranger. He could describe nothing of this great person; and all that he could fay was, that he was very old, much older than the fea and land, the moon or the stars. Friday (said I again), if this great and old person has made all things in the world, how comes it to pass, that all things, as you in particular, do not adore and worship him? Upon this looking very grave, with a perfect sweet look of innocence, he replied, Master, all things say O to him, by which it may reasonably be supposed he meant adoration. And where, faid I, do the people of your country go when they die? He answered, they all go to Benamuckee. What, and those people that are eaten up, do they go there? Benamuckee

S

S

I

r

n h

1-

1-

d

e

1

m

a

11

namuckee said he, love 'em dearly; me pray to Benamuckee in de canoe, and Benamuckee would

love me when dey eat a me all up.

Such discourses as these had I with my man. and fuch made me fensible, that the true God is worshipped, though under imperfect similitudes, and that the false adoration which the heathens give to their imaginary Deity, is as great an argument of the divine effence, as the most learned atheifts, falfely fo called, can bring against it : for God will be glorified in his works, let the denomination be what it will; and I cannot be of that opinion which some conceive, that God should decree men to be damned for want of a right notion of faith, in a place where the wisdom of the Almighty has not permitted it to be preached: and therefore cannot but conclude, that fince obedience is the best facrifice, these poor creatures, acting by that light and knowledge which they are possessed with, may undoubtedly obtain a happy falvation, though not that enjoyment with Christ as his faints, confessors, and martyrs must enjoy.

But laying these determinations aside, more sit for divines than me to discuss, I began to instruct my servant in the saving knowledge of the true Deity, in which the directions of God's Holy Spirit assisted me. I listed up my hands to heaven, and pointing thereto, told him, that the great Maker of heaven and earth lived there: that as his infinite power fashioned this world out of a confused chaos, and made it in that beautiful frame which we behold, so he governs and preserves it by his unbounded knowledge, sovereign greatness,

and

and peculiar providence; that he was omnipotent, could do every thing for us, give every thing to us. and take every thing away from us: that he was a rewarder and a punisher of good and evil actions: that there was nothing but what he knew, no thoughts fo fecret but what he could bring to light: and thus by degrees I opened his eyes, and described to him the manner of the creation of the world. the situation of Paradise, the transgression of our first parents, the wickedness of God's peculiar people, and the universal fins and abominations of the whole earth. When these things were implanted in his mind, I told him, that as God's juftice was equal to his mercy, he refolved to destroy this world, till his fon Jesus Christ interposed in our behalf, and to procure our redemption, obtained leave of his heavenly Father to come down from heaven into the world, where he took human nature upon him, instructed us in our way to eternal life, and died as a facrifice for our fins; that he was now ascended into heaven, mediating for . our pardon, delivering our petitions, and obtaining all those good benefits which we ask in his name, by humble and hearty prayers, all which were heard at the throne of heaven. As very frequently I used to inculcate things into his mind Friday one day told me, that if our great God could hear us beyond the fun, he must furely be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear them till they ascended the great mountains where he dwelt, to speak to him. What, said I, Friday, did you go thither to fpeak to him too? He an**fwered**

it

e

i-

n,

at

as

a

ne

it

fs.

nď

fwered, no, they never went that were young men, none but old men called their Oowakakee, meaning the Indian priefts, who went to fay O, (so he called faying their prayers), and they returned back, and told them what Benamuckee said. From hence I could not but observe how happy we christians are, who have God's immmediate revelation for our certain guide; and that our faith is neither missed, nor our reason imposed upon, by any set of men, such as these Indian impostors.

But to clear up this palpable cheat to my man Friday, I told him that the pretence of their ancient men going up to the mountain to fay O to their God Benamuckee was an imposture, and that their bringing back an answer was all a sham, if not worse; for that if there was any such thing spoken to them, surely it must proceed from an infernal spirit. And here I thought it necessary to enter into a long discourse with him, which I did after this manner.

Friday (faid I), you must know that before this world was made, there was an Almighty Power existing, by whose power all things were made, and whose majesty shall have no end. To be glorised and adored by beings of a heavenly nature, he created angels and archangels, that is, glorious spirits resembling himself, to encompass his throne eternally singing forth his praise in the most heavenly sounds and divine harmony. And among this heavenly choir Lucifer bore a great sway, as being then one of the peculiar savourites of these celestial abodes; but he, contrary to that duty he owed his heavenly sovereign, with unbounded ingratitude

tra

gratitude to his divine Creator, not only envied him that adoration which was his due, but thought to usurp that throne which he had neither power to keep, nor title to pretend to. He raised a disfension and civil war in heaven, and had a number of angels to take his part, Unbounded folly! Stupendous pride! thus to hope for victory, and afpire above his powerful Creator! The Deity, not fearful of fuch an enemy, yet justly provoked at this rebellion, commissions his archangel Michael to lead forth the heavenly hoft, and give him battle; the advantage of which was quickly perceived by Satan's being overthrown, and the prince of the air (for fo the devil was called), with all his fallen angels, driven headlong into a difinal place, which is called Hell.

The recital of this truth made my man give the greatest attention, and he expressed a great satisfaction by his gestures, that God had sent the devil into the deep hole. And then I desired him to give great heed to what I had surther to say.

No sooner (proceeded I) was God freed from, and the heavens clear of this archtraitor, but the Father speaks to the Son and Holy Spirit, who belonged to his essence, and were equal to him in power and glory, Come let us make man (said he) in our own image, after our own likeness, Gen. i. 26. to have dominion over the creatures of the world which we have created. And these he intended should glorify him in heaven, according to their obedience in this state of probation on earth, which was, as it were, to be the school to train them up for those heavenly mansions. Now

Satan seeing himself foiled, yet that God had not taken the power from him as prince of the air, which power heaven defigned he should retain, whereby his creatures might be tried; in revenge for the difgrace he had received, he tempts Adam's wife Eve to taste of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, which God had forbidden. He appears to her in the shape of a serpent, then a most beautiful creature, and tells her, that it was no better than an imposition which God had put upon her and her husband, not to eat of that fair fruit which he had created; that the taste thereof would make them immortal like God himfelf; and consequently as great and powerful as he. Upon which she not only ate thereof herself, but made her husband eat also, which brought them both under the heavenly displeasure.

Here Friday expressed a great concern; Ab, poor mans! (cried he) naughty womans! naughty devil! make God not leve de mans, make mans like

devil himself.

Friday, faid I, God still loved mankind; and though the devil tempted human nature so far, he would not suffer him to have an absolute power over them. I have told you before of his tentender love to his people, till they like Lucifer, disobeyed his commands, and rebelled against him; and even then, how Jesus Christ his only son came to save sinners. But still every man that lives in the world is under temptation and trial. The devil has yet a power, as prince of the air, to suggest evil cogitations in our minds, and prompt us on to wicked actions, that he might glory

p

of

ab

fty

in he in our destruction. Whatever evil thoughts we have, proceed from him. So that God, in this our distress, expects we should apply ourselves to him by fervent prayer for speedy redress: he is not like Benamuckee, to let none come near him, but Oowakakee, but suffers the people as well as priests to offer themselves at his feet, thereby to be delivered from the power and temptation of the devil.

t

r

d

n

le

1-

1,

ke

nd

ar,

w-

n.

er,

m;

fon

hat

ial.

air,

ory in

But though at first my man Friday expressed some concern at the wickedness of Lucifer, I found it not so easy to imprint the right notions of him in his mind, as it was about the divine effence of God; for there nature affilted me in all my arguments, to shew to him plainly the necessity of a great first cause, and over-ruling governing power of a fecret directing providence, and of the equity and reasonableness of paying adoration to our Creator; whereas there appeared nothing of all this in the notion of an evil spirit, of his first beginning, his nature, and above all, of his inclination to evil actions, and his power to tempt us to the like. And indeed this unlearned Indian, by the mere force of nature, puzzled me with one particular question, more than ever I could have expected.

I had, it feems, one day, been talking to him of the omnipotent power of God, and his infinite abhorrence of fin, infomuch that the scriptures styled him a consuming fire to all the workers of iniquity; and that it was in his power, whenever he pleased, to destroy all the world in a moment,

the

the greater part of which are continually offend-

ing him.

When, with a ferious attention, he had listened a great while to what I faid, after I had been telling him how the devil was God's enemy in the the hearts of men, and used all his malice and skill to defeat the good defigns of providence, and destroy the kingdom of Christ in the world, and fo forth: Very well, master, (said Friday), you fay God is so strong, so great, is he not much strong, much mightier than the naughty devil? To be fure, Friday, faid I, God is more wife, and stronger than the serpent: he is above the devil, which makes us pray to him, that he would tread down Satan under our feet, enable us to refift his violent temptations, and quench his fiery darts. Why then answered Friday quickly, if God, as you fay, has much frong, much might as the devil, why God no kill devil, make no more tempt, no more do wicked?

You may be certain I was strangely surprised at this question of my man's; and though an o'd man, I was but a young doctor, and consequently very ill qualified for a casuist, or a resolver of intricate doubts in religion. And as it required some time for me to study for an answer, I pretended not to hear him, nor to ask him what he said; but so earnest was he for an answer, as not to forget his question, which he repeated in the very same broken words as above. When I had recovered myself a little, Friday (said 1) God will at last punish him severely, being reserved for judgment, and is to be cast into the bottomless pit, to re-

ft

le

Ct

to

W

main in fire everlasting. But all this did not satisfy Friday; for returning upon me, he repeated my words, RESERVE AT LAST, me no understand; but why not kill devil now, not kill devil, great, great, while ago? Friday, said I, you may as well ask me why God does not kill you and me, when by our wicked actions we so much offend his Divine Majesty? He gives us time to repent of our sins, that thereby we may obtain pardon. At these words, obtain pardon, Friday mused a great while; and at last looking me stedsastly in the face; Well, well, said he, that's very well; so you, I, devil, all wicked mans, all preserve, repent, God pardon all.

Indeed here I was run down to the last extremity, when it became very evident to me, how mere natural notions will guide reasonable creatures to the knowledge of a Deity, and to the homage due to the supreme being of God; but however, nothing but divine revelation can form the knowledge of Jesus Christ, and of a redemption purchased for us, of the mediator of the new covenant, and of an intercessor at the footstool of God's throne; and therefore the gospel of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, that is, the Word and Spirit of God, promifed for the guide and fanctifier of his people, are the most necessary instructors of the fouls of men, in the faving knowledge of the Almighty, and the means to attain eternal happiness.

And now I found it necessary to put an end to this discourse between my man and me; for which purpose I rose up hastily, and made as if I

t

1

12

had some occasion to go out, sending Friday for fomething that was a good way off. I then fell on my knees and befeeched God rhat he would inspire me fo far as to guide this poor favage in the knowledge of Christ, to answer his questions more clearly, that his conscience might be convinced, his eyes opened, and his foul faved. When he returned again, I entered into a very long discourse with him, upon the tubject of the world's redemption by the faviour of it, and the doctrine of repentance preached from heaven, together with an holy faith in our bleffed redeemer Jesus Chrift: then I proceeded to explain, according to my weak capacity, the reason why our Saviour took not on him the nature of angels, but rather the feed of Abraham; and how the fallen angels had no benefit by that redemption; and lastly, that he came only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel, and the like. God knows I had more fincerity than knowledge in all the ways I took for this poor Indian's instruction; and I must acknowledge what I believe every body that acts upon the fame principle will find, that in laying heavenly truths open before him, I informed and instructed myself in many things, that either I did not know or had not perfectly confidered before; to that however this poor creature might be improved by my instruction, certain it is, that I myfelf had great reason to be thankful to Providence for fending him to me. His company allayed my grief, and made my habitation comfortable; and when I reflected that the folitary life to which I had been fo long confined, had made

me to look further towards heaven, by making me the instrument, under Providence, to save the life and, for ought I know, the soul of this poor savage, by bringing him to the knowledge of Jesus Christ, it caused a secret joy to spread through every part of my soul: and I frequently rejoiced, that ever I was brought to this place, which I once thought the most miserable part of the world.

In this thankful frame of mind did I afterwards continue, while I abode on the island, and for three years did my man and I live in the greatest enjoyment of happiness. Indeed I believe the savage was as good a Christian as I; and I hope we were equally penitent; and such penitents as were comforted and restored by God's Holy Spirit; for now we had the word of the Lord to instruct us in the right way, as much as if we had

been on the English shore.

t

By the constant application I made of the scriptures, as I read them to my man Friday, I earnestly endeavoured to make him understand every part of it, as much as lay in ray power. He also, on the other hand, by his very serious questions and inquiries, made me a much better proficient in scriptrue-knowledge than I should have been by my own private reading and study. I must not omit another thing, proceeding from the experience I had in my retirement: it was that infinite and inexpressible blessing, the knowledge of God through Jesus Christ, which was so plain and easy to be understood, as immediately to direct me to carry on the great work of sincere repentance for my sins,

and

and laying hold of a Saviour for eternal life, to a practical stated reformation, and obedience to all God's institutions, without the assistance of a reverend and orthodox divine; and especially by this same instruction, so to enlighten this savage creature, as to make him so good a Christian, as very sew could exceed him. And there was only this great thing wanting, that I had no authority to administer the holy sacrament, that heavenly participation of Christ's body and blood; yet however we rested ourselves content, that God would accept our desires, and according to our

faith have mercy on us.

But what we wanted one way, was made up in another, and that was univerfal peace in our little We had no disputes and wranglings about the nature and equality of the holy, b'effed, and undivided Trinity, no niceties in doctrine, or schemes of church-government; no sour and morose diffenters, to impose more sublimated notions upon us; no pedant sophisters to confound us with unintelligible mysteries; but instead of all this, we enjoyed the most certain guide to heaven, that is, the word of God; besides which we had the comfortab'e views of his Spirit leading us to the truth, and making us both willing and obedient to the instruction of his word. As the knowledge and practice of this are the principal means of falvation, I cannot fee what it avails any Christian church, or man in the world, to amuse himself with speculations and oppinions, except it be to display their particular vanity and affectation.

You may well suppose, that, by the frequent discourses

discoures we had rogether, my man and I became most intimately acquainted, and that there was but very little that I could fay, but what Friday understood; and indeed he spoke very fluently, though it was but broken English. I now took a particular pleasure in relating all my adventures, especially those that occurred since my being cast on this island. I made him understand that wonderful mystery, as he conceived, of gunpowder and bullet, and taught him how to shoot. I also presented to him a knife, which pleased him exceedingly, making him a belt, with a frog, hanging thereto, like those in which we wear hangers in England; and instead of a hanger to put in the frog, I gave him a hatchet, not only a good, but even a better weapon upon many occasions. In a word, my man thus accoutred, looked upon himself as great as Don Quixote, when that celebrated champion went to combat the windmill.

I next gave him a very particular description of the territories of Europe and in a particular manner of Old England, the place of my nativity. I laid before him the manner of our worshipping God, our behaviour one to another, and how we trade in ships to every part of the universe. I then told him my misfortunes in being shipwrecked, showing him as near as I could the place where the ship lay, which had been gone long before; but I brought him to the ruins of my boat, which before my whole strength could not move, bu now was almost rotten, and fallen to pieces. I observed my man Friday to view this boat with an uncommon

e

e

0

n

li

Q

ıt

uncommon curiosity; which when he had done, he stood pondering a great while, and said nothing. At last, said I, Friday, what makes you ponder so much? He replied, O master, me see

like boat come to place at my nation,

It was fome time indeed before I understood what my man meant; but examining strictly into it, I plainly found, that such another boat refembling mine had come upon the country where he dwelt; that is to say, by his farther explination, that the boat was driven there through violent storms and stress of weather. It then came into my mind, that some European ship having been cast away, the poor distressed creature were forced to have recourse to the boat to save their lives; and being all, as I thought, drowned, I never concerned myself to ask any thing concerning them, but my only enquiry was about the boat, and what description my man could give of it.

Indeed Friday answered my demands very well, making every thing very plain to my understanding; but beyond measure was I satisfied, when he told me, with great warmth and ardour, O master, we save white mans from drown; upon which I immediately asked him, if there were any white mans as he called them, in the boat. Tes, yes, said he, the boat full, very full, white mans. How many, Friday? said I. Hereupon he numbered his singers, and counted seventeen. And when I asked him what became of them all, and whether they lived or not? he replied, Tes yes, master, they all live, they be live among my nation, This information put fresh thoughts into my head, that these

these must be those very men who before I concluded had been swallowed up in the ocean after they had left their ship, that had struck upon the rocks of my kingdom, and after escaping the sury of the deep, landed upon the wild shore, and committed themselves to the sury of these devour-

ing Indians.

I

d

n

r

ıt

The manner of their cruelties to one another, which consequently, as I thought, must be acted with greater barbarity to strangers, created in me a great anxiety, and made me still more curious to ask Friday concerning them: he told me he was fure they lived still there, having resided among them above four years and that the lavages gave them victuals to live upon. But pray, Friday, faid I, whence proceeded all this good nature and generofity? How came it to pass that they did not kill and eat them, to please their devouring appetites, and occasion so splendid an entertainment amomg them? No, no, faid Friday, they not kill 'em, they make brother with 'em; by which I underflood, there was a truce between them. And then I had a more favourable opinion of the Indians, upon Friday's uttering these words; My nation, t'other nation, no eat mans, but when mans make war fight; as though he had faid, that neiwher those of his kingdom, nor any other nation that he knew of, ever ate their fellow-creatures, but fuch as their law of arms allowed to be devoured; that is, those miserable captives, whose misfortue it should be to be made prisoners of -) war.

Some considerable time after, upon a very plea-

fant day, in most serene weather, my man I stood upon the top of a hill, on the east side of the island, whence I had once before beheld the continent of America. I could not rell immediately what was the matter; for fuddenly Friday fell a jumping and dancing, as if he had been mad; and upon my demanding the reason of his behaviour, O joy, said he, O glad! there see my country, there my nation, there live white mans all gether. And indeed such a rapturous sense of pleasure appeared in his countenance, that his eyes, had an uncommon fparkling and brightness, and such a strange eagerness, as if he had a longing desire to be in his own country again. This made me not fo well fatisfied with my man Friday as before; for by this appearance I made no dispute, but that if he could get back thinher again, he would not onbe unmindful of what religion I had taught him, but likewise of the great obligation he owed me for his wonderful deliverence; nay, that he would not only inform his countrymen of me, but accompany hundreds of them to my kingdom, and make me a miterable facrifice like those unhappy wretches taken in battle.

Indeed I was very much to blame to have these cruel and unjust suspicions, and must freely own I wronged the poor creature very much, who was of a quite contrary temper. And had he had that discerning acuteness which many Europeans have, he would certainly have perceived my coldness and indifference, and also have been very much concerned upon that account; as I was now more circumspect, I had much lessened my kind-

ness and familiarity with him; and while this jealousy continued, I used that artful way (now too much in fashion, the occasion of strife and dissention) of pumping him daily, thereby to discover whether he was deceitful in his thoughts and inclinations: but certainly he had nothing in him but what was consistent with the best principles, both as a religious Christian and a grateful friend; and indeed I found every thing he said was so ingenious and innocent, that I had no room for suspicion, and in spite of all uneasiness, he not only made me entirely his own again, but also caused me much to lament that I ever conceived

one ill thought of him.

As we were walking up the same hill another day, when the weather was so hazy at sea, that I could not perceive the continent, Friday, faid ,I, don't you wish yourself to be in your own country, your own nation, among your old friends and acquaintances? Yes, said he, me, me much O glad to be at my own nation. And what would you do there, Friday? Would you turn wild again, eat mens flesh, and be a savage as you were formerly? No, no, (answered he, full of concern, and shaking his head), Friday now tell them to live good, tell them pray God, tell them to eat corn bread, cattle flesh, milk, no eat man again. But furely, replied I, if you should offer to do all this they will kill you, and to manifest their contempt of fuch instruction, eat you up when they have done. He then put on a grave, yet innocent and smooth countenance, saying, No, they no kill me, they willing love learn; that is, that they would i du

be very willing to learn: adding withal, that they had learned much of the bearded mans that come in the boat. Will you, faid I, go back again Friday? He smiled at that, and told me, that he could not fwim fo far. But, faid I, I make a canoe for you: Tes, master, said he, me go if you go, me no go if you stay. I go, Friday! why, would you have them eat me up, and devour your kind master? No, no, faid he, me make them not eat master, me make they much love you; that is, he would tell them how I had flain his enemies, and thereby faved his life, for which reason he would make them love me: and then he related to me, as well as he was able, how exceeding kind those of his nation were to the white or bearded men, as he called them, who in their great calamity were driven into their country.

It was from this time, indeed, I had strong inclinations to venture over, and use my utmost efforts, if possible, to join these white-beared men, who undoubtedly were Spaniards or Portuguese; for, thought I, it must be certainly a better and fafer way to escape when there is a good company, than for me alone from an island forty miles off the shore, and without any assistance. Some days after, Friday and I being at work, as usual, at the fame time diverting ourselves with various discourfes, I told him I had a boat which I would bestow upon him, whenever he pleased to return to his own nation: and to convince him of the truth of what I said, I took him with me to the other fide of the island, where my frigate lay, and then taking it from under the water (for I always

always kept it funk for fear of a discovery) we both went into it, to see how it would manage

fuch an expedition.

And really never could any be more dexterous in rowing than my faithful servant, making the boat go as fast again as I could. Well, now, Friday, faid I, shall we go to your so much desired nation? But instead of meeting with that chearfulness I expected, he looked very dull and melancholy at my faying fo; which indeed at first surprised me, till he made me fensible that his concern was about the boat's being too small to go so far a voyage. Upon which I fet him understand I had a much bigger; and accordingly the next day went to the place where the first boat lay which I had made, when all the strength I had, or art I could use, failed me in my attempt to get it into the water; but now it having lain in the sun two and twenty years, and no care being taken of it all that while, it became in a manner rotten. My man told me that fuch a boat would do very well to the purpose, sufficient to carry enough vittle, dring, bread, for that was his manner of talking. In short, my mind being strongly fixed upon my design of going over with him to the continent, I very plainly told him, that we would both go and make a boat full as big, and more proportionable than that, wherein he might fafely return to his own nation,

These words made Friday look so very pensive, that I thought he would have fallen at my feet. It was some time before he could speak a word, which made me ask him what was the matter with

him?

him? He replied in a very foft and moving tone, What has poor Friday done? why are you angry mad with poor servant. What me done, O what me done. Friday faid I, you never yet have offended me; what makes you think I am angry with you when I am not angry at all? You no angry, no angry, faid he several times; if you be no angry, why den send Friday over great water to my own nation. Why furely Friday, answered I, did not you wish to be there, when from a mountain you beheld the place where you was born? and is it not to fatisfy your defires that I am willing to give you leave to return thither? Tes, yes, faid Friday, me wish be there sure 'nough, but me den wish master there to; no wish Friday there, no master there. In short, he could not endure the thoughts of going there without me. I go there, Friday, faid I, what shall I do there?—He answered very quickly, O master, you do great deal much good, you teach all de wild mans to be good tame mans; you learn them to be fober, live good life, to know God, and pray God. Alas! poor Friday, faid I, what can I do against their priests of Benamuckee, or indeed what good can I make your nation fenfible of, when I myself am but a poor ignorant man? No, no, master faid he, you be no ignorant, you teachee me good, you teachee them good. You shall go without me Friday, faid I, for I don't care to accompany you thither; I would rather live in this folitude than venture among fuch inhuman favages. Go your way, fince you defire it, and leave me alone by myself, as I was before I saved your life.

Never was any creature more thunder-struck

than

21

fue

his

co

me

ma

Wi

than Friday was at these words. Go me away, leave master away, faid he after along silence, no, no, Friday die, Friday live not, master gone; as though he had faid, I neither can nor will live, if my mafter fends me from him. And here I cannot but take notice of the strong ties of friendthip which many time furpass those of consanguinity; for often we find a great disagreement among kindred; and when there is any feeming regard for each other, it is very feldom true, and scarce ever lasting, if powerful interest does not bear the fway; and that alone is often the occafion of the greatest hatred in the world, which is to defire the death of parents and relations, for the fake of acquiring their fortunes: but there was no fuch thing between my fervant and me: instead of which, there was the greatest gratitude, and the most fincere love: he found me not only his deliverer, but his preferver and comforter; not a fevere and cruel tyrant, but a kind, loving, and affable friend. He wanted for no manner of fuftenance; and when he he was ill, or out of order, I was his physician, not only for his body, but his foul; and therefore no wonder was it, that fuch an innocent creature, long fince divested of his former natural cruelty, should have an uncommon concern at fo cruel a separation from me, which pierced him to the very foul, and made him defire even to die, rather than live without me.

After I had told Friday, in a very careless manner, that he should be at his liberty as soon as the boat was made, the language of his eyes expressed

all imaginable confusion; when immediately running to one of his batchets, which he used to wear as a defensive weapon, he gives it into my hand, with a heart fo full, that he could scarcely fpeak. Friday, faid I, what is it you mean? what must I do with this? Only kill Friday, said he, Friday care not live long. But what must I kill you for, replied I again. Ah! dear master, what made you Friday save from eat a me up, so keep long Friday, make Friday love God, and not love Benamuckee, and now Friday fend away, never fee Friday more. As though the poor creature had faid, Alas, my dearest, kind master, how comes it to pass, that after having ventured your precious life, to fave me from the jaws of devouring cannibals like myfelf, after fuch a tender regard to provide for me fuch a comfortable nourishment and continuing fo long a kind master, and a most fincere friend; and after making me forfake the false notion of an Indian Deity, and worship the true God in spirit and in truth: after all this, how comes it now, that you are willing to fend me away to my former course of living, by which means undoubtedly we shall be dead to each other; but greater must be my misfortune, that I shall never, behold my best friend I have in the world any more. And this undoubtedly, though he could not express himself so clearly, must be his fentiments; for the tears ran down his cheeks in fuch a plentiful manner, that I had much ado to retrain from weeping also, when I beheld the poor creature's affliction; fo that I was forced to comfort him in the best manner I could; which I did, by

fa

by telling him, if he was content to abide with me. I should be ever willing to keep him.

After Friday's grief was something abated, more fully to convince me of his affection he faid, O mafter, me not care to be in my nation, leave you here; me defire nation learn good, that's all; meaning, that his defire was for the conversion of that barbarous people. But as I had no apostolic mission, nor any concern about their falvation; fo I had not the least intention or desire of undertaking it; and the strength of my inclination, in order to escape, proceeded chiefly from my late difcourse with Friday, about these seventeen white bearded men, that had been driven upon the barbarian coast, whom I designed to join, as the only means to further our escape. To which intent my man and I went to fearth for a proper tree to fell, whereof we might make a large periagua or canoe, to undertake the voyage; and indeed we were not long in finding one fit for our purpole, there being enough of wood in the ifland to have built a fleet of large veffels; but the thing we principally wanted was, to get one fo near the water, that we might lance it after it was finished, and not commit so horrid a mistake as I had done once before.

Well, after a great fearch for what was best and most convenient, Friday at last, whose judgment in such affairs was much superior to mine, pitches upon a kind of wood the most fitting for it. To this day I cannot tell the name of the tree nor describe it any other way, than only by saying that it is very like what we call fustic, or

P 2

0

r

betwixt

betwixt that and the Nicar agua wood, being much of the same colour and smell. But though my man exceeded me in the knowledge of the most proper tree, yet I shewed him a much better and cleaner way to make a canoe than ever he knew before: for he was for burning the hollow or cavity of the tree, in order to make this boat; but I then told him how we might do it with tools learning him at the same time how to use them, which indeed he did very dexteroully; so that in a month's labour we finished it, making it very handsome, by cutting the outside into the true shape of a boat. After this it took us a full fortnight before we could get her into the water, which we did, as it were, inch by inch, upon great rollers: but when she was in, she would have carried twenty men, with all the ease imaginable.

h

m

de

de

th

as

fo

fe la

m

As I was very well pleased, you may be sure at the lanching of this man of war of mine, I was no less amazed to behold with what dexterity my man would manage her, turn her, and paddle her along. Well Friday, said I, what do you think of it now? Do you think this will carry us over? Tes master, said he, me venture over well, though great blow wind. But my design was yet farther, which he was insensible of; and that was to make a mast and sail, and to provide her with an anchor and cable. As to a mast, that was no dissicult thing at all to procure; so I fixed upon a straight young cedar-tree, which I found near the place, great plenty of it abounding in the island; and setting Friday to cut it down, I gave him particular

ticular directions how to shape and order it; but as to the fail, that I managed myfelf. I very well knew I had fome old ones, or pieces of fails enough, which had lain fix and twenty years by me; but not being careful to preserve them, as thinking I should have no occasion to use them any more, when I came to look them over, I found them almost all rotten, except two; and with thefe I went to work, and after a great deal of pains and awkward tedious stitching for want of needles, at length I finished a three-corner ugly thing, like what we call in England a shoulder-ofmutton fail, to go with a boat at bottom, and a little small sprit at the top, like those which our longboats use, and which I very well knew how to manage; especially fince it was like that which I had in my patron's fishing-boat, when, with my boy Zury, I made my escape from the Barbarian fhore.

It was near two months, I think, before I completed this work, that is, the rigging, and fitting my masts and sails; and indeed they were nicely done, having made a small stay, and a sail, or foresail to it, to assist, if we should turn to the westward; and, which was still more, I fixed my rudder to the stern of her, to steer her with; and though I was but a very indifferent shipwright, yet as I was sensible of the great usefulness and absolute necessity of a thing like this, I applied myself to it with such a constant application, that at last I accomplished my design; but what with the many dull contrivances I had about it, and the sailure of many things, it cost me as much pains in ordering

ordering, as in making the boat. Besides, when all this was done, I had my man to teach what belonged to its navigation: for tho' he very well understood how to paddle a canoe along, he was an utter stranger to a fail and rudder, and was amazed when he saw me work the boat to and again, in the fea by them, and how the fail gibed and filled this way, or that way, as the course we failed changed. After some time, and a little use, I made all these things very familiar to him, so that he became an expert failor, except in relation to the compass; and that I could make him understand but little of. But, as it happened, there was feldom occasion for it, there being but little cloudy weather, and scarce ever any fog in those parts; the stars were always visible in the night, and the shore conspicuous by day, except in the rainy feafon, which confined every one to his habitation.

Thus entered in the feven and twentieth year of my reign, or captivity, which you pleafe, (the last three of which, blessed with the company of my man Friday, ought not to be reckoned), I kept the anniversary of my landing here, with the same thankfulness to God, for his tender mercies, as I did before; and certainly, as I had great cause for a thankful acknowledgment for my deliverance at first, I had much greater now, for such singular and additional testimonies of the care of providence over me, in all my distresses both of body and mind, and the great hopes I had of being essecually and speedily delivered; for I had a strong impression upon my mind, that I should not be another year

in this island. But, however, I continued on with my husbandry, digging, planting, and fencing, as usual; gathering and curing my grapes, and doing

all other things that were necessary.

And now the rainy season beginning to come on obliged me to keep the longer within doors; but before this, I brought my new vessel into the creek, where I had landed my rafts from the ship, and haling her up to the shore, I ordered my man Friday to dig a dock sufficient to hold her in, and deep enough to give her water, wherein she might float; and then, when the tide was out, we made a strong dam cross the end of it, to keep out the water; by which means she lay dry, as to the tide from the sea; and to keep the rain from her, we thatched her over as it were with boughs of trees, like a house; and so we waited for the months of November and December, in which I designed to venture over the ocean.

No fooner did the feasonable weather begin to draw near, but so much I was elevated with this new designed adventure, that I daily prepared for the voyage. The first thing I thought on, was to lay by a certain quantity of provisions, as a sufficient store for such an expedition, intending in a week or fortnight's time to open the dock, and launch out the boat for that purpose. But one morning as I was very busy upon something necessary for this occasion, I called Friday to me, and bid him go to the sea-shore, and see if he could sind a turtle or tortoise, a thing which we commonly had once a-week, as much upon account of the eggs, as for the sake of the sless. He had

not been long gone, but he came running back, as though he was purfued for life, and as it were flew over my outward wall, or fence, like one that felt not the ground, or steps he fet his feet on; and before I had time to inquire the reason of his precipitation, he cries out, O dear master, O forrow, forrrow! Bad! O bad! Why, what's the matter, Friday? faid I, O yonder, yonder, faid he, there be one, two, or three canoes! two, three. Surely (thought I) there must be six by my man's way of reckoning; but, on a stricter inquiry, I found there were but three. Well, Friday, faid I, don't be terrified, I warrant you we will not only defend ourselves against 'em, but kill the most of these cruel savages. But though I comforted him in the best manner I could, the poor creature trembled fo, that I fcarce knew what to do with him: O master, said he, they come look Friday, cut pieces Friday, cut a me up. Why, Friday faid I, they will eat me up, as well as you, and my danger is as great as yours. But fince it is fo, we must resolve to fight for our lives. What say you? can you fight, Friday? Yes, faid he very faintly, me floot, me kill what I can, but there come great many number. That's no matter, faid I again, our guns will terrify those that we do not kill: I am very willing to stand by you to the last drop of my blood; now tell me, if you will do the like by me, and obey my orders in whatfoever I command? Friday then answered, O master, me lose life for you, me die when you bid die. Thus concluding all questions concerning his fidelity, immediately I fetched him a good dram of rum, (of which I had been

been a very good husband), and gave it him, to comfort his heart. After he had drank it, I ordered him to take the two fowling-pieces, which we always carried and load them with large swan-shot as big as small pistol-bullets; then I took four muskets, and loaded them with two slugs, and five small bullets each, charging my two pistols each with a brace, I hung my great sword, as customary, naked to my side, and gave Friday his hatchet, as a most excellent weapon for defence.

Thus perpared, I thought as well of myfelf as any knight errant that ever handled a fword and spear. I took my perspective glass, and went up to the fide of the hill, to fee what I could discover; and I perceived very foon, by my glafs, that there was one and twenty favages, three prisoners, and three canoes; and that their chief concern feemed to be the triumphant banqeut upon the three poor human bodies, a thing which by this time I had observed was very common with them. I also remarked, that they did not land at that place from whence Friday made his escape, but nearer to the creek, where the shore was low, and where a thick wood came very close to the fea. My foul was then filled with indignation and abhorrence at fuch inhuman wretches, which put a period to all my former thoughts in their vindication; neither would I give myself time to consider their right of conquest, as I had done: before; but descending from the mountain, I came down to Friday and told him, I was refolved to go speedily to them and kill them all; askfrand by me? When by this time being recovered form his fright, and his spirit much cheared with the dram I had given him, he was very pleafant, yet seriously telling me, as he did before, when I bid die, he would die.

And now it was, having fixed my resoluton in so frong a manner, that nothing could divest my breast of its uncommon fury; I immediately divided the loaded arms betwixt us. To my man Friday I gave a pistol to stick in his girdle, with three guns upon his shoulder, a weight too great, I confess, to bear; but what must a poor king do, who had but one foldier in the world? But to thew I made him bear no more than what I would lay on myfelf, I fluck the other pistol in my girdle, and other three guns upon my fhoulders; nay fomething more, but that was like Esop's burthen, a small bottle of rum, which was foon lightened, to our exceeding refreshment. Thus we marched out, under a ponderous load of armour, like two invincible champions, with a quantity of powder and bullets to fland our battle, and load again when the pieces were discharged. And now my orders being to be obeyed, I charged Friday to keep close behind me, and not to flir, or fhoot, or attempt any thing till I commanded him; and, in the interim, not to fpeak fo much as one word. It was in this order I fetched a compass to the right hand, of near a mile, as well to get over the creek, as to attain the wood; and by this I thought to come within shot of them before I could be discerned, as I found by my glass would not be difficult to accomplish. But

But how fickle and wavering is the mind of man, even in our greatest fury and strongest inclination? For while I was taking this march, my resolution began to abate, not through fear of their numbers, who were a parcel of naked unarmed wretches, but those reflections occurred to my thoughts: What power was I commissioned with, or what occasion or necessity had I to go and imbrue my hands in human blood, and murder people that had neither done nor intended to do me any wrong? They were innocent in particular as to me; and their barbarous custom was not only their misfortune, but a fign that God had left them in the most immense stupidity; but yet did not warrant me to be a judge of their actions, much less an executioner of his righteous judgments, that on the contrary whenever he thought fit, he would take vengeance on them himself, and punish them in a national way, according to their national crimes; but this was nothing at all to me, who had no concern with them. Indeed my man Friday might justify himself, because they were his declared enemies, of that very fame nation that went to facrifice him before; and indeed it was lawful for him to attack them, which I could not fay was so with respect to me. So warmly did these things press upon my thoughts all the way I went, that I only refolved to place myfelf fo as to behold their bloody entertainment, without falling upon them, except fomething more than ordinary, by God's special direction, should oblige me thereto.

Thus fixed in my resolution, I entered into the

thick wood, (my man Friday following me close behind) when with all possible wariness and silence I marched till I came to the skirt of it, on that fide which was the nearest to them; for only one end of the wood interposed between me and them. Upon which I called very foftly to Friday; and thewing him a great tree, that was just at the corner of the wood, I ordered him to repair thither, and bring me word, if he could plainly perceive their actions. Accordingly he did as I commanded him, and came back with this melancholy flory, that they were all about their fire, eating the flesh of one of their prisoners; and that another lay bound upon the fand, a little distant from them; which they defigned for their next facrifice; and this, he told me, was not one of their nation, but one of those very bearded men, who were driven by a storm into their country, and of whom he had so often talked to me about. You may be fure, that, upon hearing this, my foul was ready to fink within me; when ascending up into a tree I faw plainly, by my glass, a white man, who lay upon the beach of the sea, with his hands and feet tied with flags, or things resembling rushes, being covered with cloaths, and teemed to be an European. From the tree, where I took this prospect, I perceived another tree, and a thicket beyond it, about fifty yards nearer to them, than where I was; which, by taking a fmall circle round, I might come at undiscovered, and then I should be within half a shot of these devourers. And this confideration alone, to be more perfectly The revenged

di

to

lik

ma kil

th

revenged upon them, made me with-hold my paffion, though I was enraged to the highest degree
imaginable; when going back about twenty paces,
I got behind some bushes, which held all the
way till I came to the other tree, and then I afcended to a little rising ground, not above eighteen
yards distance, and there I had a full view of these
creatures, and I could perceive all their actions.

Such a fight did then appear, as obliged me not to lose a moment's time. No less than nineteen of these dreadful wretches sat upon the ground, close huddled together, expressing all the delight imaginable at fo barbarous an entertainment; and they had just fent other two to murther this poor unhappy Christian, and bring him limb by limb to their fire; for they were just then going to untie the bands from his feet, in order for death, as fetters are knocked off the feet of malefactors before they go to the place of execution. Hereupon, immediately turning to my man, Now, Friday, faid I, mind what I fay, fail in nothing, but do exactly as you fee me do. All which he promifing he would perform, I fet down one of my mulkets, and the fowling-piece upon the ground, and Friday did the same by his; and with the other musket I took my aim at the favages, bidding him do the like: Are you ready, said I? Yes, master, said he. Why then fire at them, faid I; and that very moment I gave fire likewife.

I only killed one, and wounded two; but my man Friday, taking his aim much better than I, killed two, and wounded three. You may be fure they were in a dreadful consternation, at such an

unexpected

an unexpected disaster; and those who yet had escaped our penetrating shot, immediately jumped upon their feet, but were in fuch confussion, that they knew not which way to run or look, not knowing from whence their destruction came. We then threw down our pieces, and took up others, giving a fecond dreadful volley; but as they were loaded only with swan-shot, or small pistol-bullets, we perceived only two of them fall; though many were wounded, who run yelling and screaming about like mad creatures. Now, Friday, faid I, lay down your piece, and take up the musket, and follow me. He did fo, with great courage, when shewing ourselves to the savages, we gave a great shout, and made directly to the poor victim, who would have been facrificed, had not our first fire obliged the butchers, with three others, to jump into a canoe. By my order, Friday fired at them, at which shot I thought he killed them all, by reason of their falling to the bottom of the boat; however, he killed two, and mortally wounded a third. In the mean time I cut the flags that tied the hands and feet of the poor creature, and lifting him up, asked him in the Portuguese tongue, What he was? He answered me in Latin, Christianus; but so very weak and faint, that he could scarce stand or speak. Immediately I gave him a dram, and a piece of bread to cherish him, and asked him what countryman he was? He faid, Espaniola, and then urtered all the thankfulness imaginable for his deliverance. Signior, (faid I, with as much Spanish as I-was master of), let us talk afterwards, but fight now; here take

ju

Ol

fo K

Tin!

515

take this fword and pistol, and do what you can. And indeed he did fo with fuch courage and intrepidity, that he cut two of them to pieces in an instant, the savages not having the power to fly for their lives. I ordered Friday to run for those pieces we had left at the tree, which he brought me with great swiftness, and then I gave him my musket, while I loaded the rest. But now there happened a fierce encounter between the Spaniard and one of the favages, who had made at him with one of their wooden swords; and though the former was as brave as could be expected, having twice wounded his enemy in the head; yet, being weak and faint, the Indian had thrown him upon the ground, and was wresting my sword out of his hand, which the Spaniard very wifely quitting, drew out his pistol, and shot him through the body before I could come near him, though I was running to his affistance. As to Friday, he pursued the flying wretches with his hatchet, dispatching three, but the rest were too nimble for him. The Spaniard taking one of the fowling-pieces, wounded two, who running into the wood, Friday purfued and killed one; but the other, notwithstanding his wounds, plunged himself into the sea, and fwam to those two who were left in the canoe, which, with one wounded, were all that escaped out of the one and twenty. The account is as follows.

Killed at first shot } 3 | Killed, or died of } from the tree } 3 | their wounds } rothem excelled as inducted by an allow a first matter to the state of the state of

e

e

At the second Bot By Friday in the boat 2 Ditto, of those first } wounded Ditto, in the wood

Escaped in the boat whereof one wound-ed, if not flain

Total 21

By the Spaniard

The favages in the canoe worked very hard to get out of our reach, and Friday was as eager in pursuing them; and indeed I was no less anxious about their escape, lest, after the news had been carried to their people, they should return in multitudes, and destroy us. So being resolved to pursue them, I jumped into one of their canoes, and bid Friday follow me; but no fooner was I in, than, to my furprise, I found another poor creature, bound hand and foot for the flaughter, just as the Spaniard had been, with very little life in him. Immediately I unbound him, and would have helped him up; but he could neither stand nor speak, but groaned so pireoully as thinking he was only unbound in order to be flain. Hereupon I bid Friday speak to him, and tell him of his deliverance; when pulling out my bottle, I made the poor wretch drink a dram, which, with the joyful news he had received, to revived his heart, that he fat up in the boat, As foon as Friday began to hear him speak, and look more fully in his face, it would have moved any one to tears to perceive his uncommon transports of joy; for he kissed, embraced him, hugged him, cried, laughed, hallooed, jumped about, danced, fung, then cried again, wrung his hands, beat his face and head, then fung and jumped

jumped about again, like a distracted creature: so that it was a great while before I could make him speak to me, or tell me what was the matter with him; but when he came to the liberty of his speech, at last he told me it was his father.

Here indeed I was infinitely moved to see that dutiful and tender affection this poor savage had to his aged parent. He would sit down by him in the boat, open his breast, and hold his father's head close to his bosom, half and hour together, to cherish it; then he took his arms and ancles, which were stiff and numbed with binding, and chassed and rubbed them with his hands; by which means perceiving what the case was, I gave him some rum, which proved of great benefit to him.

While we were bufy in this action, the favages had gotten almost out of fight; and happy it was, we did not pursue them; for there arose from the north-west, which continued all night long, fuch a violent storm, that I could not suppose otherwise but that they were all drowned. ter this, I called Friday to me, and asked 'him, if he had given his father any bread? He shook his head, and said, None, not one bit, me eat a up all? fo I gave him a cake of bread out of a little pouch I carried for this end. I likewise gave him a dram for himself, and two or three bunches of raifins for his father. Both these he carried to him, for he would make him drink the dram to comfort him. Away he then runs out of the boat as if he was bewitched, with fucir an extraordinary fwiftness, that he was out of fight

Q3

as it were in an instant; but at his return I perceived him slacken his pace, because he had something in his hand. And this I sound to be, as he approached nearer, an earthen jug with some water to his father, with two more cakes of bread, which he delivered into my hands. Being very thirsty myself, I drank some of the water, of which when his father had drank sufficiently, it more revived his spirits than all the rum I had

given him.

I then called Friday to me, and ordered him to carry the Spaniard one of the cakes, and fome water, who was reposing himself upon a green place under the shade of a tree, but so weak, that though he exerted himfelf, he could not stand upon his feet. Upon which I ordered Friday to rub and bathe his ancles with rum, as he did his father's. But every minute he was employed in this, he would cast a wishful eye towards the boat, where he left his father fitting; who fuddenly disappearing, he flew like lightning to him, and finding he only laid himfelf down to eafe his limbs, he returned back to me prefently; and then I spoke to the Spaniard to let Friday help him, and lead him to the boat, in order to be conveyed to my dwelling where I would take care of him. Upon which, Friday took him upon his back, and fo carried him to the canoe, fetting him close by his father; and prefently stepping out again, launched the boat off, and paddled it. along the shore faster than I could walk, though the wind blew very hard too: and having brought them fafe to the creek, away he runs to ferch the other

other cance; which he brought to the creek almost as soon as I got to it by land; when wasting me over, he took our new guests out of the boat; but so weak were they, that I was forced to make a kind of a hand-barrow; and when I came to my caftle, not being willing to make an entrance into my wall, we made them a handsome tent, covered with old fails, and boughs of trees, making two good beds of rice straw, with blankets to lie upon and cover them. Thus, like an absolute king, over subjects who owed their lives to me, I thought myself very considerable, especially as I had now three religions in my kingdom, my man Friday being a Protestant, his father a Pagan, and the Spaniard a Papist; but I gave liberty of conscience to them all.

To get provision for my poor weak subjects, I ordered Friday to kill me a yearling goat; which when he had done, I cut off the hinder quarters, and chopping it into small pieces, boiled and stewed it, putting barley and rice into the broth. This I carried into their tent, set a table, dined with them myself, and encouraged them. Friday was my interpreter to his father, and indeed to the Spaniard too, who spoke the language of the savages pretty well. After dinner I ordered Friday to setch home all our arms from the field of battle, and the next day to bury the

dead bodies, which he did accordingly.

And now I made Friday inquire of his father whether he thought those savages had escaped the late storm in their canoe; and if so, whether they would not return with a power too great for

us to refift? He answered, that he thought it impossible they could outlive the storm; or if they were driven fouthwardly, they would come to a land where they would as certainly be devoured, as if they were drowned in the sea. And suppose they had attained their own country, the strangenels of their fatal and bloody attack, would make them tell their people, that the rest of them were killed by thunder and lightning, not by the hand of man, but by two heavenly spirits (meaning Friday and me) who were fent from above to destroy them. And this, he said, he knew, because he heard them say the same to one another. And indeed he was in the right on't; for I have heard fince, that these four men gave out, that whoever went to that inchanted island, would be destroyed by fire from the gods.

No canoes appearing some time after, as I expected, my apprehensions ceased: instead of which my former thoughts of a voyage took place, especially when Friday's father assured me I should have good usage in his nation. As to the Spaniard, he told me, that sixteen more of his countrymen, and Portuguese, who had been shipwrecked, made their escape thither; that though they were in union with the favages, yet they were very miserable for want of provisions and other necessaries. When I asked him about the particulars of his voyage, he answered, that their ship was bound from Roi de la Plata to the Havanna; that when the ship was lost, only five men perished in the ocean; the rest having faved themselves in the boat, were now landed on the

the main continent. And what do they intend to do there? faid I. He replied, they have concerted measures to escape, by building a vessel, but that they had neither tools nor provisions, so that all their designs came to nothing. Supposing (said I) I should make a proposal, and invite them here, would they not carry me prisoner to New Spain? Heanswered, No; for he knew them to be such honest men, as would scorn to act such inhuman baseness to their deliverer: That, if I pleased, he and the old savage would go over to them, talk with them about it, and bring me an answer; that they should all swear sidelity to me as their leader, upon the holy sacrament; and, for his part, he would not only do the same, but stand by me to the last drop of his blood, should there be occasion.

These solemn assurances made me resolve to grant them relief, and to fend these two over for that purpose: but when every thing was ready, the Spaniard raised an objection, which carried a great deal of weight in it: You know, Sir, said he, that having been some time with you, I cannot but be senfible of your flock of rice and corn, fufficient, perhaps, for us at present, but not for them, should they come over presently; much less to victual a vessel for an intended voyage. Want might be as great an occafion for them to disagree and rebel, as the children of Mrael did against God himself, when they wanted bread in the wildernefs. And therefore my advice is to wait another harvest, and in the main time cultivate and improve some more land, whereby we may bawe

have plenty of provisions, in order to execute our de-

fign.

This advice of the Spaniard's I approved extremely; and so fatisfied was I of his fidelity, that I esteemed him ever after. And thus we all four went to work upon some more land, and against feed-time we had got so much cured and trimmed up, sufficient to fow 22 bushels of barley on, and 16 jars of rice, which was in short all the seed we had to spare. As we were four in number, and by this time all in good health, we feared not a hundred Indians, should they venture to attack us: and while the corn was growing, I pitched upon some trees, fit for to build us a large veffel, in case the Spaniards came over; which being marked, I ordered Friday and his father to cut them down, appointing the Spaniard, who was now my privy counfellor, to overfee and direct the work. I likewise increased my flocks of goats, by shooting the wild dams, and bringing home their kids to my inclosure: nor did I neglect the grape-season, but cured them as usual, though I had fuch a quantity now, as would have filled 80 barrels with raifins. And thus all of us being employed, they in working, and I in providing for them, till harvest came, God Almighty bleffed the increase of it so much, that from twentytwo barrels of barley, we threshed out two hundred and twenty, and the like quantity of rice, fufficient to victual a ship fit to carry me and all the Spaniards to any part of America.

Thus the principal objection being answered, by a sufficient stock of provision, I sent my two am-

baffadors

do

baffadors over to the main land, with a regal authority to administer the oaths of allegiance and sidelity, and have an instrument signed under their hands, tho' I never asked whether they had pen, ink, or paper; when giving each of them a musket, eight charges of powder and ball, and provision enough for eight days, they sailed away with a fair gale, on a day when the moon was at full.

Scarce a fortnight had paffed over my head but, impatient for their return, I laid me down to sleep one morning, when a strange accident happened, which was ushered in by my man's coming running to me, and calling aloud, Master, master, they are come, they are come. Upon which, not dreaming of any danger, out I jumped from my bed, put on my cloaths, and hurried through my little grove; when looking towards the fea, I perceived a boat about a league and a half distant. standing in for the shore, with the wind fair. I beheld they did not come from the fide where the land lay on, but from the fouthermost end of the island: fo these being none of the people we wanted. I ordered Friday to lie still, till such time as I came down from the mountain, which with my ladder I now afcended, in order to discover more fully what they were: and now, with the help of my perspective glass, I plainly perceived English ship, which I concluded it to be, by the fashion of its longboat: and which filled me with fuch uncommon transports of joy, that I cannot tell how to describe; and yet some secret doubts hung about me, proceeding from I know

not what cause, as though I had reason to be upon my guard. And indeed I would have no man contemn the secret hints and intimations of danger, which very often are given, when he may imagine there is no possibility of its being real: for had not I been warned by this silent admonition, I had been in a worse situation than before

and perhaps inevitably ruined.

Not long it was, before I perceived the boat to approach the shore, as tho' they looked for a place where they might conveniently land; and at last they ran their boat on shore upon the beach, about half a mile's distance; which proved so much the happier for me, fince, had they come into the creek, they had landed just at my door, and might not only have forced me out of my castle, but plundered me of all I had in the world. Now I was fully convinced they were all Englishmen, three of which were unarmed and bound; when immediately the first four or five leaped on shore. and took those three out of the boat as prisoners; one of whom I could perceive used the most passionate gestures of intreaty, affliction, and despair, while the others, in a leffer degree, shewed abundance of concern.

Not knowing the meaning of this, I was very much astonished, and I beckoned to Friday, who was below, to ascend the mountain, and likewise view the sight. O master says he to me, you see English mans eat prisoners as well as Savage mans. And do you think they will eat them, Friday? said I. Yes, said Friday, they eat a all up. No, no, said I, Friday, I am much more concerned lest they

CO

be

WO

cei

ber

mo

yet

they murder them; but as for eating them up, that

I am fure they will never do.

And now I not only lamented my misfortune in not having the Spaniard and favage with me, but also that I could not come within shot of them unperceived, (they having no fire arms among them) and fave these three men whom I thought they were going to kill with their fwords. But fome comfort it was to me, that I perceived they were fet at liberty to go where they pleafed, the rafeally feamen feattering about as though they had a mind to fee the place: and fo long did they negligently ramble, that the tide had ebbed for low, as to leave the boat aground. Nor were the two men that were in her more circumspect; for having drunk a little too much liquor, they fell fast asleep; but one of them waking before the other, and perceiving the boat too fast aground for his strength to move it, he hallooed out to the rest, who made all possible expedition to come to him: but, as providence ordered it, all their force was ineffectual to lanch her, when I could hear them speak to one another, Why let ber alone Jack, can't ye, she'll float next tide; by which words I was fully convinced they were my own countrymen. All this while I lay very quiet, as being fully fensible it cou'd be no less than ten hours before the boat would be affoat, and then it would be fo dark, as that they could not eafily perceive me, by which means I should be at more liberry to hear their ta'k, and observe all their motions: not but that I prepared for my defence; yet as I had now another fort of enemies to com-

R

bat with, I acted with more caution. I took two fusees on my shoulders, and gave Friday three muskets; besides, my formidable goat-skin coat, and monstrous cap, made me look as sierce and terrible as Herculus of old, especially when two pistols were stuck in my belt, and my naked sword

hanging by my side.

It was my design at first not to make any attempt till it was dark; but it being now two o'clock, in the very heat of the day, the sailors were all straggling into the woods, and undoubtedly were lain down to sleep. The three poor distressed creatures, too anxious to get any repose, were, however, seated under the shade of a great tree, about a quarter of a mile from me. Upon which, without any more ado, I approached towards them, with my man following behind me, and, before I was perceived, I called aloud to them in Spanish, What are ye, Gentlemen?

At these words they started up in great consusion, when they beheld the strange sigure I made, they returned no answer, but seemed as if they would sly from me; Gentlemen, (said I in Englsh) don't be afraid, perhaps you have a friend nearer than you expect. He must be from heaven, said one of them gravely pulling off his hatt for we are past all help in this world. All help is from heaven, said I; but Sir, as I have perceived every action between you and these brutes since your landing, only inform me how to assist you, and I will

do it to the utmost of my power.

Am I talking with God or man? (faid he in melting tears) Are you of human kind, or an an-

gel? Sir, said I, my poor habit may tell you I am a man, and an Englishman, willing to affist you, having but this servant only; here are arms and ammunition: tell freely your condition, can we fave you? The story, faid he, is too long to relate, fince our butchers are so near; but Sir, I was master of that ship, my men have mutinied, and it is a favour they have put my mate, this passenger and me, on shore without murdering us, though we expect nothing but perishing here. Are your enemies gone, said I, No, replied he, (pointing to a thicket) there they lie, while my heart trembles, lest, having feen and heard us, they should murder us all. Have they fire-arms, faid I. They have but two pieces, said he, one of which is left in the boat. He also told me, there were two enormous villians among them, that were the authors of this mutiny, who, if they were killed or feized, might induce the rest to return to their obedience. Well well, faid I, let us retire farther under the covering of the woods; and there it was I made these conditions with him.

I. That while they staid in the island, they should not pretend to any authority; but should entirely conform to my orders, and return me the arms which I should put into their hands.

II. That if the ship was recovered, they should afford Friday and myself our passage gratis to En-

gland.

When he had given me all the satisfaction I could desire, I gave him and his two companions each of them a gun, with powder and ball sufficient, advising them to fire upon them as they

R 2

lay

lay sleeping. The captain modestly said, that he was forry to kill them; though on the other hand, to let these villains escape, who were the authors of his mifery, might be the ruin of us all, should they bring the ship's company upon us, Well, said he, do as you think fit: and so accordjugly I fired, killing one of the captain's chiefest enemies, and wounding the other, who eagerly called for assistance; but the captain (who had reserved his piece) coming up to him, Sirrab, faid he, ' tis too late to call for affistance, you should rather cry to God to pardon you villany; and so knocked him down with the stock of his gun; three others were also slightly wounded, who at my approach cried, out for mercy. This the captain granted, upon, condition that they would fwear to be true to him in recovering the ship, which they solemnly did; however, I whiliged the captain to keep them bound. After which I fent Friday and the captain's mate to fecure the boat, and bring away the oars and fail; when at their return, three men coming back, and feeing their late distressed captain, now their conqueror, submitted to be bound also. And then it was, that having more liberty; I related the adventures of my whole life, which he heard with a ferious and wonderful attention. After this I carried him and his two companions into my little fortified castle shewed them all my conveniencies, and refreshed them with such provisions as I could afford. When this was over, we began to confider about regaining the ship: he said, that there were twenty-fix hands on board, who knowing their lives were forfeited

m

forfeited by the law, for conspiracy and mutiny, were fo very hardened, that it would be dangerous for our small company to attack them. This was a reasonable inference indeed; but fomething we must resolve on, and immediately put in execution: we therefore heaved the boat upon the beach fo high that she could not shoot off at high water mark, and broke a hole in her not easily to be stopped; so that all the fignals they gave for the boat to come on board were in vain. This obliged them to fend another boat ashore, with ten men armed, whose faces the captain plainly descried, the boatswain being the chief officer; but he faid there were three honest lads among them, who were forced into the conspiracy. Hereupon I gave him fresh courage, (for I had perceived he was in concern); in the mean while securing our prifoners, except two, whom we took to our affiftance, we thought ourfeles able enough to adventure a battle. When the failors landed, and beheld their boat in that condition, they not only hallooed, but fired for their companions to hear, yet they received no answer. This struck them with horror and amazement, thinking their companions were murdered, they made as if they would return to the ship, I could perceive the captain's countenance change at this, till of a fudden three men were ordered to look after the boat, while the other feven leapt on shore, in order to fearch for their companions; and indeed they came to the brow of the hill, near my ancient castle, from whence they could fee R 3 OI

r

0

is

g

re

ed

lay sleeping. The captain modestly said, that he was forry to kill them; though on the other hand, to let these villains escape, who were the authors of his mifery, might be the ruin of us all, should they bring the ship's company upon us, Well, said he, do as you think fit: and so accordjugly I fired, killing one of the -captain's chiefest enemies, and wounding the other, who eagerly called for assistance; but the captain (who had referved his piece) coming up to him, Sirrab, faid he, ' tis too late to call for affistance, you should rather cry to God to pardon you villany; and so knocked him down with the stock of his gun; three others were also slightly wounded, who at my approach cried, out for mercy. This the captain granted, upon, condition that they would fwear to be true to him in recovering the ship, which they solemnly did; however, I ebliged the captain to keep them bound. After which I fent Friday and the captain's mate to fecure the boat, and bring away the oars and fail; when at their return, three men coming back, and feeing their late distressed captain, now their conqueror, submitted to be bound also. And then it was, that having more liberty; I related the adventures of my whole life, which he heard with a ferious and wonderful attention. After this I carried him and his two companions into my little fortified castle shewed them all my conveniencies, and refreshed them with such provisions as I could afford. When this was over, we began to confider about regaining the ship: he said, that there were twenty-fix hands on board, who knowing their lives were forfeited

y

th

th

de

my

forfeited by the law, for conspiracy and mutiny, were so very hardened, that it would be dangerous for our small company to attack them. This was a reasonable inference indeed; but fomething we must resolve on, and immediately put in execution: we therefore heaved the boat-upon the beach fo high that she could not shoot off at high water mark, and broke a hole in her not easily to be stopped; so that all the figuals they gave for the boat to come on board were in vain. This obliged them to fend another boat ashore, with ten men armed, whose faces the captain plainly descried, the boatswain being the chief officer; but he faid there were three honest lads among them, who were forced into the conspiracy. Hereupon I gave him fresh courage, (for I had perceived he was in concern); in the mean while securing our prifoners, except two, whom we took to our affiftance, we thought ourfeles able enough to adventure a battle. When the failors landed, and beheld their boat in that condition, they not only hallooed, but fired for their companions to hear, yet they received no answer. This struck them with horror and amazement, thinking their companions were murdered, they made as if they would return to the ship, I could perceive the captain's countenance change at this, till of a sudden three men were ordered to look after the boat, while the other feven leapt on shore, in order to fearch for their companions; and indeed they came to the brow of the hill, near my ancient castle, from whence they could see R 3 OI

to a great distance in the woods, and there shouting and hallooing till tired and weary, at lenght feated themselves under a spreading tree. My opinion was, that nothing could be done till night, when I might use some artifice to get them all out of the boat: but of a fudden they started up, and made to the sea-side; hereupon I ordered Friday and the captain's mate to go over the creek, and halloo as loud as they could, and fo decoying them into the woods, come round to me again. And this indeed had good effect; for the followed the noise, till coming westward to the creek, they called for their boat to carry them over, and taking one of the men out of her, left two to look after her, having tastened her to the stume of a little tree on shore. Hereupon immediately the captain and our party passing the creek, out of their fight, we surprised them both, by the captain's knocking down one, and ordering the other to furrender upon pain of death, and who, being the honestest of them all, sincerely joined with us. By this time it was pretry late; when the rest returning to their boat, which they found aground in the creek, the tide out, and the men gone, they ran about wringing their hands, crying it was an inchanted island, and that they should be all murdered by spirits or devils. My men would willingly have fallen upon them, but I would not agree to hazard any of our party. But to be more certain, Friday and the captain crawled upon their hands and feet as near as possible; and when the boatswain approached in fight, fo eager was the captain, that he

tl

V

de

th

be

T

he fired, and killed him on the foot; Friday wounded the next man, and the third ran away. Hereupon I advanced with my whole army, and it being dark, I ordered the men we had furprifed with the boat, to call them by their names, and to parley with them. Accordingly he called out aloud, Tom Swith, Tom Smith! he answered. Who's that? Robinson! answered the other, For God's fake, Tom, surrender immediately, or you're all dead men. Who must we surrender to? says Smith. To our captain and fifty men here, who have taken me prisoner, wounded Will. Frye, and killed the boatswain. Shall we have quarters then, faid he. Hereupon the captain calls out, You Smith, you know my voice, furrender immediately, and you shall all have your lives granted except Will. Atkins. Hereupon Atkins cries out, What have I done, Captain, more than the rest, who have been as bad as me? but that was a lie, for he was the person that laid hold of him, and bound him. However, he was ordered to fubmit to the governor's mercy, for fuch was I called. And fo laying down their arms, we bound them all, and feized on their boat.

After this, the captain expostulated with them, telling them, that the governor was an Englishman, who might execute them there; but he thought they would be fent to England, except Will. Atkins, who was ordered to prepare for death next morning. Hereupon Atkins implored the captain to intercede for his life, and the rest begged that they might not be sent to England. This answered our project for stezing the ship.

For after fending Atkins, and two of the worst, fast bound to the cave, and the rest being committed to my bower, I fent the captain to treat with them in the governor's name, offering them pardon if they would affift in recovering the ship. Upon which they all promifed to stand by him till the last drop of their blood; and whoever acted treacherously, should be hanged in chains upon the beach. They were all released on these assurances; and then the captain repaired the other boat, making his paffenger captain of her, and gave him four men well armed; while himself, his mate, and five more, went in the other boat. By midnight they came within call of the ship, when the captain ordered Robinson to hail her, and tell them that with great difficulty they had found the men at last. But while they were discoursing, the captain, his mate, and the rest entered, and knocked down the second mate, and carpenter, secured those that were upon the deck, by putting them under hatches, while the other boat's crew entered and fecured the fore-castle; they then broke into the round-house, where the mate, after some refistance, shot the pirate captain through the head, upon which all the rest yielded themselves prisoners. And thus the ship being recovered, the joyful fignal was fired, which I heard with the greatest joy imaginable: nor was it long before he brought the ship to an anchor to the creek's mouth, where coming to me unawares, There, fays he, my dearest friend and deliverer, there is your Ship, and we are your servants; a comfort fo unspeakable, as made me swoon in his arms, while

while with gratitude to heaven we were tenderly

embracing each other.

Nothing now remained, but to confult what we should do with the prisoners, whom he thought it was not fafe to take on board. Hereupon, concerting with the captain, I dreffed myfelf in one of his fuits, and fending for them, told them, That as I was going to leave the island with all my people, if they would tarry there, their lives should be spared; if not, they should be hanged at the first port they came at. They agreed to stay. Hereupon I told them my whole story, charging them to be kind to the Spaniards that were expected, gave them all my arms, and informing them of every thing necessary for their sublistence, land my man Friday went on board. But the next morning two of the men came swimming to the ship's side, defiring the captain to take them on board, though he hanged them afterwards, complaining mightily how barbarously the others used them. Upon which I prevailed with the captain to take them in, and being feverely whipt and pickled, they proved more honest for the future. And so I bid farewell to this island, carrying along with me my money, my parrot, umbrella, and goat-skin cap; fetting fail December 12, 1686, after twenty-eight years, two months, and nineteen days refidence, the same day and month that I escaped from Sallee, landing in England, June 11, 1687, after five and thirty years absence from my own country, which rendered me altogether a stranger there.

Here I found my first captain's widow alive; who had buried a fecond hufband, but in very 생님이...

mean

mean circumstances, and whom I made mighty easy upon my account. Soon after I went down to Yorkshire, where all my family were expired, except two fifters, and as many of one of my brother's children. I found no provision had been made for me, they concluding I had been long fince dead; so that I was but in a very slender station. Indeed the captain did me a great kindness, by his report to the owners, how I had delivered their ship on the defolate island, upon which they made me a present of 2001. Sterling. I next went to Lisbon, taking my man Friday with me, and there arriving in April, I met the Portuguese captain, who had taken me on board on the African coast; but being ancient, he had left off the sea, and refigned all to his fon, who followed the Brasil trade. So altered both of us were, that we did not know each other at first, till I discovered myself more fully to him. After a few embraces, I began to inquire of my concerns; and then the old gentleman told me, that it was nine years fince he had been at Brasil, where my partner was then living, but my trustees were both dead; that he believed I should have a good account of the product of my plantation; that the imagination of my being loft had obliged my trustees to give an estimate of my share to the procurator-fiscal, who, in case of my not returning, had given one third to the king, and the rest to the monastery of St. Augustine; but if I put in my claim, or any one for me, it would be returned, except the yearly product, which was given to the poor. I then defired him to tell me what improvement he thought had been made of my

re

thi

ta

not

far

int

like

my plantation, and whether he imagined it was worth my while to look after it? He answered, he did not know how much it was improved; but this he was certain of, that my partner was grown vastly rich upon his half of it; and that he had been informed, that the king had 200 moidores per annum for his third part. He added, that the furvivors of my trustees were persons of an ingenuous character; that my partner could witness my title, my name being registered in the country, by which means I should indisputably recover considerable fums of money. But, answered I, how could my trustees dispose of my effects, when I made you only my heir? This he faid was true; but there being no affidavit made of my death, he could not act as my executor. However, he had ordered his fon, (then at Brail) to act by procuration upon my account, and he had taken poffession of my sugarhouse, having accounted himself for eight years with my partner and trustees for the profits, of which he would give me a very good account.

And indeed this he performed very faithfully, in a few days, making himself indebted to me 470 moidores of gold, over and above what had been lost at sea, after I had left the place. And then he recounted to me what missortunes he had gone through, which forced my money out of his hand, to buy part in a new ship: but, says he, you shall not want, take this, and when my son returns, every farthing shall be paid you. Upon which he put into my hand a purse of 150 moidores in gold, as likewise the instrument containing the title to the ship which his son was in, and which he offered as security

fecurity for the remainder. But really when I saw so much goodness, generosity, tenderness, and real honesty, I had not the heart to accept it; for fear he should straiten himself, upon my account. It is true, said he, it may be so; but then the money is yours, not mine, and you may have the greatest occasion for it. However, I returned fifty of them back again, promising that I would freely give him the other hundred when I got my effects in my hands, and that I defigned to go myself for that purpose. But he told me he could fave me that trouble, and so caused me to enter my name with a public notary, as likewise my affidavit, with a procuration affixed to it; and this he ordered me to fend in a letter to one of his acquaintance, a merchant in Brasil: and indeed nothing could be more faithfully and honourably observed; for in feven months time I had a very faithful account of all my effects, what fums of money were raifed, what expended, and what remained for my use: in a word, I found myself to be worth 4000l. Sterling, and 100l. per annum. Nor was this all; for my partner congratulated me upon my being alive, telling me how much my plantation was improved, what negroes were at work, and how many Ave Marias he had faid to the virgin Mary for my prefervation, desiring me to accept kindly fome prefents he had fent me, which I found shewed the greatest generosity.

No fooner did the ship arrive, but I rewarded my faithful captain, by returning him the hundred moidores; and not only forgiving him all he owed me, I allowed him yearly a hundred more, and fifty refolved to go to England, I returned letters of thanks to the prior of St. Augustine, and in particular to my old partner, with very suitable presents. By the captain's advice I was persuaded to go by land to Calais, and there took passage for England; when, as it happened, I got a young English gentleman, a merchant's son at Litbon, to accompany me, together with two English, and two Portuguese gentlemen; so that with a Portuguese servant, an English sailor, and my man Friday, there were nine of us in number.

Thus armed and equipped, we set out, and came to Madrid, when the summer decaying, we hasted to Navarre; where we were informed, that there was scarcely any passing, by reason of the prodigious quantity of snow; so that we were obliged to abide near twenty days at Pampeluna, and at last to take a guide to conduct us safe towards Tholouse. And now twelve other gentlemen, joining with us, together with their servants, we had a very jolly company. Away our guide led us by the frightful mountains, and through so many intricate mazes and windings, that we insensibly passed them, which, as we travelled along, ushered us into the prospect of the fruitful and charming provinces of Languedoc and Gascogne.

But now came on two adventures, both tragical and comical. First, our guide was encountered by three wolves and a bear, who set upon him and his horse, and wounded him in three places: upon which my man riding up to his assistance, shot one of them dead upon the spot, which made the

others retire to the woods. But the pleasantest adventure was, to behold my man attack the bear. 'Tis fuch a creature, that if you let him alone, he will never meddle with you: and this my man very well knew, and so begging leave of me in broken English, he told us, he would make good laugh. Why, you filly fool, faid I, he'll eat you Eatee me up, replied he, by up at a mouthful. way of fcorn, me not only eatee him, but make much Upon which, pulling off his boots, good laugh. he claps on his pumps, and running after the monstrous beast, he called out, that he wanted to difcourse with him; and then throwing stones on purpose to incense him, the beast turns about in a fury, and with prodigious strides shuffles after him. But though he was not swift enough to keep up pace with Friday, who made up to us for help, yet being angry, You dog, said I, immediately take horse, and let us shoot the creature. But he cried, Dear master, no shoot, me make you laugh much. And fo he turned about making figns to follow, while the bear ran after him, till coming to a great oak, he afcended in a minute, leaving his gun at the bottom of it. Nor did the bear make any difficulty of it, but afcended like a cat, though his weight was very great. You must consider I was not a little amazed at the folly of my man, as not perceiving any thing to occasion our laughter, till such time as we rode up nearer, and beheld the beast mounted upon the oak, on the beginning of the fame branch, to which Friday clung at the further end, where the bear durst not come. Hereupon Friday cried out, Now master me make much taugh me make de

dange

he

to

int

in long

gre

terr

But

larly were

ges,

peop

numb

OL

bear

bear dance. Upon which he fell a shaking the bough, which made the creature look behind him, to fee how he could retreat. Then, as if the bear had understood his stammering English; Why you no come farther, Mr Bear; faid he, pray, Mr Bear, come farther: and then indeed we all burst into laughter, especially when we perceived Friday drop like a fquirrel upon the ground, leaving the beast to make the best of his way down the tree. And now thinking it the most convenient time to shoot the creature, Friday cried out, O dear master, no shoot, me shoot by and by, when taking up the gun, Me no shoot yet, faid he, me Make once more much laugh. And accordingly he was as good as his word; for the creature descending backwards from the tree very leifurely, before he could lay one foot on the ground, Friday shot him through the ear, stone dead; and looking to see whether we were pleased, he burst out into a hearty laughter, faying, So we kill de bear in my country; not with the gun, but with much long arrows. Thus ended our diversion, to our great latisfaction; especially in a place where the terrible howlings struck us with a continual terror. But the fnows now growing very deep, particularly on the mountains, that ravenous creatures were obliged to feek for fustenance in the villages, where coming by furprise on the countrypeople, they killed feveral of them, besides a great number of their sheep and horses.

Our guide told us, we had yet one more dangerous place to pass by; and if there were any more wolves in the country, there we

should find them. This was a fmall plain, encompassed with woods, to get through a long lane, to the village where we were to lodge. When we entered the wood, the fun was within half an hour of fetting; and a little after it was fet, we came into the plain, which was not above two furlongs over, and then we perceived five great wolves cross the road, without taking notice of us, and so swift as though they were pursuing after their prey. Hereupon our guide believing there were more coming, defired us to be upon our guard. Accordingly our eyes were very circumspect, till about half a league farther we perceived a dead horse, and near a dozen of wolves devouring its carcafe. My man Friday fain would have fired at them, but I would not permit him: nor had we gone half over the plain, but we heard dreadful howlings in a wood on our left, when prefently we faw an hundred come up against us, as though they had been an experienced army. This obliged us to from ourfelves in the best manner; and then I ordered that every other man should fire, that those who did not, might be ready to give a fecond volley, ·should they advance upon us; and then every man should make use of his pistols. But there was no necessity for this; for the enemy being terrified, slopped at the noise of the fire; four of them were shot dead, and several others being wounded, went bleeding away, as we could very plainly difcover by the Inow. And now remembering what had been often told me, that fuch was the majesty of a man's voice, as to strike terror even -into

ce

ro

lar

fuc

the

to

Jy

api

into the fiercest creatures, I ordered all our companions to halloo as loud as possible: and in this notion I was not altogether mistaken; for they immediately turned about upon the first halloo, and began to retire: upon which, ordering a second volley in their rear, they galloped into

the woods with great precipitation.

Thus we had fome small time to load our pieces again, and then made all the hafte we could on our way; but we had not rode far, before we were obliged to put our felves in a posture of defence as before, being alarmed with a very dreadful noise in the same wood, on our left hand, the same way as we were to pass, only that it was at some distance from us. By this time the darksome clouds began to spread over the elements, and the night growing very dulky, made it so much the more to our disadvantage; but still the noise increasing, we were fully affured, that it was the howling and yelling of those ravenous creatures; when prefently three troops of wolves, on our front, appeared to our fight, as though a great number of them had a defign to furround us, and devour us in spite of fate. as they did not fall upon us immediately, we proceeded on our journey in as swift a manner as the roads would permit our horses, which was only a large trot. It was in this manner we travelled, till fuch time as we discovered another wood, and had the prospect of its entrance through which we were to pass, at the farthest side of the plain. But surely none can express the terror we were in, when approaching the lane, we perceived a confused number

number of the fiercest wolves standing, and as it were guarding its entrance. Nor were we long in this amazement, before another occasion of horror presented itself; for suddenly we heard the report of a gun at another opening into the wood, and looking that way, out ran a horse bridled and saddled, slying with the greatest swiftness, and no less than sixteen or seventeen wolves pursuing after him, in order to devour the poor creature: and unquestionably they did so, after they had run him down, not being able to hold out that swiftness with which he at first escaped them.

When we rode up to that entrance from whence the horse came forth, there lay the carcases of another horse and two men, mangled and torn by these devouring wolves; and undoubtedly one of these men was the person who fired the gun which we had heard, for the piece lay by him; but alass! most of the upper part of his body and his head were entombed in the bowels of these ra-

venous creatures.

What course to take, whether to proceed or retreat, we could not tell; but it was not long before
the wolves themselves made us come to a resolution:
for such numbers surrounded us, every one of
whom expected their prey, that, were our bodies
to be divided among them, there would not be half
a mouthful a-piece. But happy, very happy it was
for us, that but a little way from the entrance,
there lay some very large timber trees, which I
supposed had been cut down and laid there for
sale; amongst which I drew my little troop, placing
ourselves in a line behind one long tree, which
served

F

th

served us for a breast-work, when desiring them to alight, we stood in a triangle, or three fronts, inclosing our horses in the centre, the only place

where we could preferve them.

Never certainly was there a more furious charge than what the wolves made upon us in this place; and the fight of the horses, which was the principal prey they aimed at, provoked their hunger, and added to their natural fierceness. They came on us with a most dreadful noise, that made the woods ring again; and beginning to mount the pieces of timber, I ordered every other man to fire as before directed: and indeed fo well did they take their aim, that they killed feveral of the wolves at the first volley; but still we were obliged to keep a continual firing, by reason they came on like devils, pushing one another with the greatest fury. But our fecond volley something abated their courage, when stopping a little, we hoped they would have made the best of their way; however, it did not prove fo, for others made a new attempt upon us: and though in four firings we killed feventeen or eighteen of them, laming twice as many, yet they feveral times fuccessively came on, as though they valued not their lives for the fake of their prey.

Unwilling was I to spend our last shot too suddenly, and therefore called my other servant, and giving him a horn of powder, bid him lay a large train quite along the timber, which he did, while Friday was charging my suffee and his own, with the greatest dexterity. By this time the wolves coming up the timber, I set sire to the train, by snapping

fnapping a difcharged pistol chose on the powder. This fo fcorched and terrified them, that some fell down, and others jumped in among us; but thefe we immediately dispatched, when all the rest. frighted with the light, which the darksome night caused to appear more dreadful, began at length to retire; upon which, ordering our last pistols to be fired at once, giving at the fame time a great shout, the wolves were obliged to have recourse to their fwiftness, and turn tail; and then we sallied out upon twenty lame ones, cutting them in pieces with our fwords, which obliged them to how! lamentably, to the terror of their fellows, who refigned to us the field as victorious conquerors. And indeed I question whether Alexander king of Macedonia, in any of his conquests, had more occasion for triumph than we had; for he was but attacked by numerous armies of foldiers; whereas our little army was obliged to combat a legion of devils, as it were, worfe than the cannibals, who the tame moment, had they flain us, would have facrificed us, to fatisfy their voracious appetites.

Thus ended our bloody battle with the beafts, having killed threefcore of them, and faved our lives from their fury. We still had a league farther to go, when, as we went, our ears were saluted with their most unwelcome howlings, and we expected every moment another attack. But in an hours's time we arrived at the town where we were to lodge; and here we found the place strictly guarded, and all in terrible confusion, as well they might, for fear of the bears and wolves breaking into the village, in order to prey upon their

ir

C

th

Ь

er

fr

ra

man

in

th

their cattle and people. The next morning we were obliged to take a new guide, by reason the other fell very bad of his wounds, which he had received, as before mentioned. After we had reached Tholouse, we came into a warm, pleasant, and fruitful country, not infested with wolves, nor any fort of ravenous creatures: and when we told our story there, they much blamed our guide, for conducting us through the forest at the foot of the mountains, in fuch a fevere feafon, when the fnow obliged wolves to feek for shelter in the When we informed them in what manner we placed ourselves, and the horses in the centre, they exceedingly reprehended us, and told us, it was an hundred to one, but we had all been destroyed; for that it was the very fight of the horses, their so much defired prey, that made the woives more ragingly furious than they would have been, which was evident, by their being at other times really afraid of a gun; but then being exceeding hungry, and furious upon that account, their eagerness to come at the horses made them insensible of their danger and that if we had not, by a continual fire, and at last the cunning stratagem of the train of powder, got the better of them, it had been great odds if their number had not overpowered us: besides, it was a great mercy we alighted from our horses, and fought them with that courage and conduct, which had we failed to do, every man of us, with our beafts, had been devoured: and indeed this was nothing but truth; for never in my life was I fo fensible of danger, as when these three hundred devils came roaring upon us, to fluin

shun whose unwelcome company, if I was sure to meet a storm every week, would rather go a thou-

fand leagues by fea.

I think I have nothing uncommon in my passage through France to take notice of since other travellers of greater learning and ingenuity, have given a more ample account than my pen is able to set forth. From Tholouse I travelled to Paris from thence to Calais, where I took shipping, and landed at Dover the 14th of January, in a very cold season.

Thus come to the end of my travels, I foon discovered my new found estate, and all the bills of exchange I had brought were currently paid. The good ancient widow, my only privy counfellor, thought no pains nor care too great to procure my advantage; nor had I ever occasion to blame her fidelity, which drew from me an ample reward. I was leaving my effects in her hands, intending to fet out for Lifbon, and so to the Brasils; but as in the Desolate island I had some doubts about the Romish religion, so I knew there was little encouragement to fettle there, unless I would apostatize from the orthodox faith, or live in continual fear of the inquisition. Upon this account I refolved to fell my plantation; and for that intent I wrote to my old friend at Lifbon, who returned me an answer to my great satisfaction; which was that he could fell it to good account; however, if I thought it convenient to give him liberty to offer it in my name to the two merchants, the furvivors of my trustees residing at the Brasils, who consequently understood the intrinsic value, having lived just upon

upon the spot, and who I was sensible were very rich, and therefore might be the more willing to purchase it; he did not in the least doubt, but that I should make four or sive thousand pieces of eight more of it, than I could do, if I disposed of in a-

ny other manner whatfoever.

You may be fure I could not but agree with this kind and ingenuous proposal; and immediately I fent him an order to offer it unto them, which he accordingly did; so that, about eight months after, the ship being in that time returned, he gave me a satisfactory account, that they not only willingly accepted the offer, but that they had also remitted 33,000 pieces of eight to a correspondent of their own at Liibon, in order to pay for the purchase.

Hereupon in return I figned the instrument of sale according to form, which they had sent from Lisbon, and returned it again to my old friend, he having sent me for my estate, bills of three hundred twenty-eight thousand pieces of eight, reserving the payment of one hundred moidores per annum, which I had allowed him during life, likewise sifty to his son during life also, according to my faithful promise, which the plantation was

to make good as a rent-charge.

And thus having led my reader to the knowledge of the first part of my life, so remarkable for the many peculiar providences that attended it sloating in an ocean of uncertainty and disappointment, of adversity and prosperity, beginning soolishly, and yet ending happily; methinks now that I am come to a safe and pleasant haven, it is time

to cast out my anchor, and laying up my vessel, bid for a while adieu to foreign adventures. I had no other concerns to look after, but the care of my brother's two fons, which, with the good widow's persuasions, obliged me to continue at home seven years. One of these children I bred up a gentleman, and the other an experienced failor, remarkable for his courage and bravery. Besides this, I married a virtuous young gentlewoman, of a very good family, by whom I had two fons and one daughter. But my dear and tender wife leaving this earthly stage (as in the second part of my life you will hear), which rent my foul as it were afunder, my native country became weary and tiresome to me; and my nephew happening to come from the sea, tempted me to venture another voyage to the East Indies, which I did in the year 1694, at which time I visited my island, and informed myself of every thing that happened fince my departure.

One might reasonably imagine, that what I had suffered, together with an advanced age, and the sear of losing not only what I had gotten, but my life also, might have choaked up all the seeds of youthful ambition and curiosity, and put a lasting period to my wandering inclinations. But as nothing but death can fully allay the active part of my life, no less remarkable for the many various contingencies of it; you will next perceive how I visited my little kingdom, saw my successors the Spaniards, had an account of the usage they met with from the Englishmen, agreeing and disagreeing, uniting and seperating, till at last they were subjected

subjected to the Spaniards, who yet used them very honourably, together with the wonderful and successful battles over the Indians, who invaded, and thought to have conquered the island, but were repelled by their invincible courage and bravery, having taken elven men and five women prisoners, by which at my return I found about twenty young children on my little kingdom. Here I staid twenty days, left them supplies of all necessary things, as also a carpenter and a smith, and shared the island into parts, reserving the whole property to myself. Nor will you be insensible, by the account of these things, of several new adventures I have been engaged in, the battles I have fought, the deliverances I have met with; and while, in the furpriting relation of fuch remarkable occurences, I shall describe many of God's kindest providences to me in particular, no less conspicuous in the same goodness, power, and majesty of our great Creator, shewn, one way or other, over the face of the earth, if duly adbeing nor only what I had gotten, but my

on as independent of the Villet day displayed. The

od I state to less temas table for the many various consequences at the post of sext perceive how I consequence to the state that the many formation the ment of the time that the state of the state of

toolsoudul

alto might make chasted up all the feeds of

on as and supplied but person via on bones.

The further adventures of Robinson Crusoe, wherein are contained several strange and surprising accounts of his travels and most remarkable transactions, both by sea and land; with his wonderful vision of the Angelic World.

TIHEN we consider the puissant force of nature, and what mighty influence it has many times over the temper of the mind, it will be no fuch great wonder to think, that my powerful reason should be overcome by a much thronger inclination. My late acquired kingdom ran continually in my thoughts all the day, and I dreamed of it in the night; nay, I made it the continual fubject of my talk, even to impertinence when I was awake. I had fuch vapours in my head, that I actually supposed myself at my castle; that I not only perceived Friday's father, the old Spaniard, and the wicked failors, but that I talked and discoursed with them about their manner of living; that I heard thefe things related to me, which I found afterwards to be but too true; and that I executed my judgments with the greatest severity upon the offenders. And indeed, this anticipating all the pleafing joys of my life, scarcely afforded me one pleasant hour; my dear and tender wife could not but take notice of it, which drew these affectionate speeches from from her: My dear said she, I am really persuaded that some secret impulse from beaven occasions in you a determination to see the island again: nor am I less sensible, but your being engaged to me, and these dear children, is the only bindrance of your departure. I know my dear, if I was in the grave, you would not long continue at home; prevent not your bappiness on my account, whose only comfort centers in you. All that I can object is, that such an hazardous undertaking is no way consistent with a person of your years; but if you are resolved to go, added she weeping, only permit me to bear you

company, and that is all that I defire.

Such endearing tenderness, graced with the most innocent, and yet most powerful charms, brought me infenfibly into my right understanding; and when I confidered all the transactions of my life, and particularly my new engagement; that I had row one child already born, and my wife big of another; and that I had no occasion to feek for more riches, who already was bleffed with fufficiency, with much struggling I altered my resolutions at last, resolving to apply myself to fome business or other, which might put a period to fuch wandering inclinations. Hereupon I bought a little farm in the county of Bedford, with a resolution to move thither: upon this there was a pretty convenient house, surrounded with land, very capable of improvement, which fuited my temper as to planting, managing, and cultivating. Nor was I long before I entered upon my new settlement, having bought ploughs, harrows, carts, waggons, horles, cows, and sheep;

fo that I now led the life of a country gentleman, and as happy in my retirement as the greatest monach in the world. And what made me think my happiness the greater was, that I was in that middle state of life, which my father had so often recommended, much resembling the felicity of a rural retirement, which is elegantly described by the poet in these lines;

Free from all vices, free from care, Age has no pain, and youth no snare.

But in the midst of this my happiness, I was fuddenly plunged into the greatest forrow that I could possibly endure; for when I least expected it, my dear and tender wife was forced to submit to the irrefistable power of death, leaving this transitory life for a better. It is impossible for me to express the beauties of her mind, or the leveliness of her person; neither can I too much lament her lofs, which my latest breath shall necord: her influence was greater over me, than the powers of my own reasons, the importunities of friends, the instructions of a father or the melting tears of a tender and disconsolate mother; in a word, she was the spirit of my affairs, and the centre of my enterprises. But now, fince the cruel hand of death had clofed my dearest's eyes, I feemed in my thoughghts a stranger to the world; my privy counsellor being gone, I was like a ship without a pilot, that could only run before the wind. And when I looked around me in this bufy world, one part labouring for bread, and

and the other squandering away their estates; this put me mind how I had lived in my little kingdom, where both reason and religion dictated to me, that there was fomething that certainly was the reason and end of life, which was far superior to what could be hoped for on this fide the grave. My country-delights were now as infipid and dull, as music or science to those who have neither taste nor ingenuity. In short, resolving to leave off housekeeping, I left my farm, and in a few months returned to London.

But neither could that great city, fo famous for its variety of entertainment, afford me any agreeable delight; a state of Idleness I found to be the very dregs of life, and most hurtful to body and foul. It was now the beginning of the year 1694 at which time my nephew (who as I before obferved, had been brought up to the fea, and advanced to be captain of a ship) was returned from a short voyage, to Bilboa, the first he had made in that station. He comes to me one morning, telling me, that some merchants of his acquaintance had proposed to him to go a voyage for them, to the East-Indies and China, in the manner of private traders; and now, uncle faid he, if you will accompany me thither, I'll engage to land you upon your old island, to visit the state of you little kingdom.

5 I

d

it

is

re

a-

e-

m

es

re

er;

he he

es.

he

vas

un

me

ad,

nd

Just before he came in, my thoughts were fixed to get a patent for its possession, and then to fill it with inhabitants. After I had paufed a little while, and looked stedfassly on him, What devil, or Spirit, faid I, fent you with this unlucky

unluckly errand? He started at first; but recovering himself, when he perceived I was not offended; Sir, replied he, what I have proposed cannot I hope, be ftyled unluckly, fince certainly you must be desirous to see you little territory, where you reigned with more content than any of your brother kings in the universe. Nephew, faid I, if you will leave me there, and call for me as you come back, I care not if I give my confent: but he answered, that the merchants would not allow their vessel, loaden with an infinite value, to return there again, which was a month's fail out of the way: besides, Sir, said he, if I should miscarry, was your request granted, why then you would be locked up as before. This indeed carried a great deal of reason in it; but we found out a remedy, and that was, to carry a framed floop on board, ready to be fet up in the island, by the affistance of some carpenters. which we should carry with us, that might be fitted in a few days to go to fea. I was not long in forming my resolution, which overswayed my good friend the widow's persuasions, and the natural effection I bore to my young children. I made my will, and fettled my estate in such a manner, that I was' perfectly fure that my poor infants would have justice done them. The good widow not only undertook to make provision for my voyage, but also took the charge of my domestic affairs, and to provide for my childrens education; and indeed no mother could take more care, or understood that office better; for which I lived to reward, and return her my hearty thanks; The

The beginning of January 1694-5, my nephew being ready to fail, I and Friday went on board in the Downs on the 8th, having, besides that floop already mentioned, a very considerable cargo for my new colony. First, I had some servants, whom I proposed to leave there as inhabitants, or to work while I staid there, as they should appear willing: there were two carpenters, a finith, and a very ingenious fellow who was Jack of all trades; for he was not only a cooper by trade, but also he was dexterous at making wheels and hand-mills to grind corn, likewite a good turner, and a good pot maker. I also carried a taylor, who consented to stay in my plantation, and proved a most necessary fellow in the island. As to my cargo, it consisted of a sufficient quantity of linen, and English stuffs, clothing the spaniards that I expected to find there; as likewife gloves, hats shoes, stockings; together with beds, bedding, and household stuff, especially kitchen-utenfils, with pots, kettles, pewter, brafs, &c. also nails, tools of an forts, staples, hooks, hinges, and all other things necessary; all which, I think, cost me about three hundred pounds. Nor was this all; for I carried an hundred spare-arms, muskets, and fuses, besides some pistols, a considerable quantity of several forts of shot, two brass cannon, besides fwords, cutlaffes, and the iron part for some pikes and halberts. I made my nephew take with us two small quarter-deck guns, more than he had occasion for in his ship, to leave behind, if there was a necessity; that so we might build a fort there,

d

d

e

W

d

n II,

I

d

ot

e,

rs,

nd

r.

e-

he

there, and man it against all opposers whatsoever.

Well, we put out to fea; and though I can't fay this voyage was fo unprosperous as my others had been, yet contrary winds drove us fo far northward, that we were obliged to put in at Galway in Ireland, where we lay windbound two and twenty days. Here indeed our provisions were very cheap, and we added to our ship's stores, by taking in feveral live hogs, two cows and calves, which I then refolved to put on shore in my island, if our necessities did not call for them. On the 5th of February we failed from Ireland, with a very fair gale, which lasted for some days; and, I think, it was about the 20th of the same month, late in the evening, when the mate informed us, that he faw a flash of fire, and heard a gun fired; and when he was speaking, a boy came in, and told us, that the boatswain had heard another. Upon which we all ran to the quarterdeck, from whence in a few moments we perceived a terrible fire at a distance. We had immediately recourse to our reckonings, in which we were all of opinion, that there could be no land that way, it appearing to be at N. N. W. Hereupon we concluded that some ship had taken fire at sea, and that it could not be far off, by the report of the guns which we had heard. We made up directly to it, and in half an hour's time, the wind being fair, we could plainly perceive a great ship on fire in the middle of the sea. Touched with this unhappy difaster, and considering my former eircumstances, when the Portuguese captain took me

up, I immediately ordered five guns to be fired, that the poor creatures, not feeing us, it being dark, (though we could perceive their flame) might be fensible there was deliverance at hand, and confequently might endeavour to fave themselves in their boat. Nor was it long before the ship blew up in the air, and the fire was extinguished in the ocean. But supposing them all to be in their boats, we hung out our lanterns, and kept firing till eight o'clock in the morning; when, with our perspectives, we beheld two boats, full of people making towards us, though the tide was against them; then spreading out our ancient, and hanging out a waft, as a fignal for them to come on board, in half an hour's time, we came up to them, and took them all in, there being no less than fixty-four men, women, and children. It was a French merchant-ship of 300 tons, homeward bound from Quebec in the river of Canada. The master informed me how, by the negligence of the steersman, the steerage was set on fire; that at his outery for help, the fire was, as they thought, totally extinguished; but that some sparks getting between the timber, and within the ceiling, it proceeded into the hold, where there was no refisting it; that then they got into their boats, as creatures in the last extremity, with what provision they had, together with oars, fails, and a compass, intending to go back to Newfoundland, the wind blowing at S. E. and by E. tho' there were feveral chances against them, as storms to overset and founder them, rains and colds to benumb and perish their limbs, and contrary winds

to keep them back and starve them: But faid he, in this our great diffress, we heard the welcome report of your gun, when with unspeakable joy, taking down our masts and fails, we were resolved to lie by till morning; but perceiving your light we fet our oars at work to keep our boat ahead, the fooner to attain your ship, the happy instrument of our deliverance.

Indeed no one can express the joy of these poor creatures on this occasion: fear and grief are eafily fet forth; figure and tears, with a few motions of the hands and head, are all the demonstrations these passions: but an excess of joy carries in it a thousand extravagancies; especially, I think, amongst the French, whose temper is allowed to be more volatile, passionate, sprightly, and gay than that of other nations. Some were weeping, tearing themselves in the greatest agonies of sorrow and running flark mad about the ship; while the rest were stamping with their feet, wringing their hands, finging, laughing, swooning away, vomiting, fainting, with a few returning hearty thanks to the Almighty, and croffing themselves. I think, if I am not miltaken, our furgeon was obliged to let thirty of them blood. But among the paffengers, there were two priests, the one an old, and the other a young man; but what amazed me more, was, that the oldest was in the worst plight: for no fooner did he perceive himfelf freed from danger, but he dropt down, as it were, without life, and to every one's appearance, quite dead; but the furgeon, chafing and rubbing his arm, opened a vein, which at first droped, and then flowing

flowing more freely, the old man began to open his eyes, and in a quarter of an hour was well again. But foon remembring his happy change, the joy of which whirled his blood about faster than the vessels could convey it, he became so feverish, as made him more sit for bedlam than any other place; but the surgeon giving him a sleepy dose, he was perfectly composed the next morning.

Remarkable indeed was the behaviour of the young prieft. At his entrance on board the ship, he fell on his face in the most humble prostration to the Almighty. I thought indeed he had fallen into a fwoon, and so ran to help him up; but he modeftly told me he was returning his thanks to the Almighty, desiring me to leave him a few moments. and, next to his Creator, he would return me thanks And indeed he did fo, about three minutes after, with great feriousness and affection, while the tears stood in his eyes, which convinced me of the gratitude of his foul. Nor did he less shew his piety and wisdom, in applying himself to his country-people and labouring to compose them, by the most powerful reasons, arguments, and persuasions. And when, indeed, these people had taken their night's repose, in such lodgings as our ship would allow, we found nothing but the best of manners, and the most civil acknowledgments, for which the French are eminently remarkable. The next day the captain, and one of the priests, defired to fpeak with me, and my nephew, the commander. They told us, that they had faved fome money, ar d valuable things out of the ruined vessel, which was at our fervice; only that they defired to be fet on fhore

shore some where in our way. At the first my nephe w was for accepting the money; but I (who knew how hard my case would have been, had the Portuguese captain served me so) persuaded him to the contrary; and therefore told them, that as we had done nothing but what we were obliged to do, by nature and humanity, and what we ourselves might expect from others in fuch calamity; fo we took them up to fave them, not to plunder them, or leave them naked upon the land, to perish for want of fublistence, and therefore would not accept their money: but as to landing them, that was a great difficulty; for, being bound to the East Indies, it was impossible wilfully to change our voyage upon their particular account, nor could my nephew (who was under charter party to purfue it by way of Brasil) answer it to the freighters. All that we could do was, to put ourselves in the way of meeting some ships homeward-bound from the West-Indies, that if possible they might get a pasfage to France or England. Indeed they were very thankful for our first kindness; but were under great concern, especially the passengers, at their being carried to the East-Indies. They begged therefore I would keep on the banks of Newfoundland, where probably they might meet with some ship or sloop to carry them to Canada, whence they came. As this was but a reasonable request, I was inclined to grant it, fince it was no breach of charter-party, and that the laws of God and nature obliged us to do what good we could to our fellow-creatures; and besides, the danger we ourselves should be in for want of provisions:

fo we confented to carry them to Newfoundland if wind and weather would permit; if not, that we should carry them to Martinico in the West-Indies. But as it happened, in a week's time, we made the banks of Newfoundland, where the French people hired a bark to carry them to France. But the young priest being desirous to go to the East-Indies, I readily agreed to it, because I liked his conversation, and two or three of the French sailors also entered themselves on

board our thip.

Now directing our course for the West-Indies, steering S. and S. by E. about twenty days, with little wind, another adventure happened to exercife our humanity. In the latitude of 27 degrees. 5 min. north, the 19th of March, 1694-5, we perceived a fail, (our course S. E. and S.) which bore up to us, and then she appeared to be a large vessel, having lost her main-top-mast, foremast and bolt sprit; when siring a gun as a sig-nal of distress, wind N. N. W. we soon came to speak with her. She was a ship of Bristol, bound home from Barbadoes, out of which road she had been forced by a hurricane, to the westward, in which they loft their masts. They told us, their expectations were to fee the Bahama islands, but were driven away by a strong wind at N. N. W. and having no fails to work the thip with, but the main course, and a kind of square sail upon a jury foremast, because they could not come near the. land, were endeavouring to stand for the Canaries; nay, what was worse, besides all their fatigue, they were almost starved for want of provision, having are

are nothing for eleven days, all that they had aboard was fugar, a barrel of fresh water, and feven casks of rum. In this ship were three passengers, a youth, his mother, and a maid-fervant, who were in a most deplorable condition for want of food, If I had not gone on board their ship, the knowledge of their mifery had been concealed from me, and they would have inevitably perished though indeed their second mate (who was captain by reason the true captain was not on board when the hurricane happened) had before informed me that there were such persons on board, whom he supposed to be dead, being afraid to enquire after them, because he had nothing to give them for rerelief. Hereupon we refolved to let them have what we could spare, ordering the mate to bring fome of his men on board us, which he did accordingly; as he and they looked like skeletons, when the meat was fet before them. I ordered them to eat sparingly But, however, they soon fell fick; which obliged the furgeon to mix fomething in their broth, which was to be to them both food and physic. When they were ted, we ordered our mate to carry them a fack of bread, and four or five pieces of beef; but the furgeon charged them to fee it boiled, and to keep a guard: on the cook room, to prevent the men from eating it raw, and confequently killing themselves with what was deligned for their relief. But pare ticularly I defired the mate to fee what condition the poor paffengers were in, and the furgeon gave him a pitcher of the fame broth which he had prepared for the men, And being curious to

fee this scene of misery myself, I took the captain (as we called the mate of the ship) in our boat and sailed after them.

Here was a fad fight indeed! fcarce were the victuals half boiled in the pot, but they were reas dy to break open the cook-room door. To flay their stomachs, the mate gave them biscuits, which were dipped in and fortened with the liquor of the mear, which they call Breuise; telling them, it was for their own fafety, that he was obliged to give them but a little at a time: And so feeding them gradually, their bellies were cemfortably filled, and the men did very well again. But when they came to the poor gentlewoman in the cabin, who for feveral days had continued without food, giving what the had to her fon, they found her as it were in the arms of death. She was firting upon the floor of the deck, with her back up against the fides, between two chairs, which were lashed faft, and her head fhrunk between her shoulders, like a fenteless corpse. Nothing was wanting in my mate to revive and encourage her; opening: her lips; and putting fome broth into her mouth with a spoon. But not having strength to speak fire lifted up her head with much difficulty, intimaning that it was now too late! at the fame time pointing to the youth her fon, as though the defired film to do what he could to fave the lad; and in a ditula time after the died and ob as word w

firetehed out in a cabin bed, like one that had feater any life. In his mouth was a piece of an old glove, the rest of which he had ate up. At

U 2

first

first he vomitted up what the mate had given him; but at length began sensibly to revive, though in the greatest concern for the death of his tender

mother.

As to the poor maid, she lay by her mistress, like one in the last pangs of death: her limbs were distorted, one of her hands were clasped round the frame of a chair, which she gripped so hard, that it was with much dissiculty we separated her from it; her other arm lay over her head, and her seet lay both together set fall against the frame of the cabin-table; not only being starved with hunger, but overcome with grief for the loss of her mistress, whom she loved most tenderly. It was a great while before the surgeon could bring her to life, and a much longer time before the came to her senses.

After we had failed with them some days, we lest them five barrels of beef, one of pork, two hogsheads of biscuit, with peale, flour, and other things, taking three calks of sugar, some rum, and some pieces of eight for satisfaction, we left them, but took the youth and maid with us, with all their goods. The lad was about seventeen years old, handsome, modest, sensible, and well-bred, but mightly concerned for the loss of his honoured mother, having lost his father at Barbadoes but a few months before. He beseeched the surgeon to intercede with me to take him out of the ship; for that the sailors, not sparing a small suffenance had starved his mother. But hunger has no bounds no right, and consequently is incapable of any compassion. When the surgeon told him, that

our voyage might put him in bad circumslances, and farther from his friends; he answered, he did not care, so he was delivered from that terrible crew: that as the captain (meaning me) had faved him from death, fo he was fure he would do him no harm; and as for the maid, when she was restored to her senses, she would be no less thankful, let us carry them where we would. And indeed the furgeon fo represented their case to me that I consented, and took them on board with all their goods, except eleven hogsheads of sugar; but the youth having a bill of lading, I made the commander oblige himself to deliver a letter and the deceased widow's goods to Mr. Rogers, a merchant in Bristol; but I believe the ship was lost at fea, for we could never hear what became of her afterwards. We were now in the latitude of 19 deg. 32 min. having as yet a tolerable good voyage. But, passing by several little incidents relating to wind and weather, I shall relate what is most remarkable concerning my little kingdom to which I was then drawing near. I had great difficulty in finding it; for as I came to, and went from it before, on the fouth and east side of the illand, as coming from the Brafils; fo now approaching between the main and the island, not having any chart for the coast, nor land-mark, it obliged us to go on shore several islands on the mouth of the river Oroonoko, but to no purpose. This I perceived, that what I thought was a continent before, was no fuch thing, but a long ifland, or rather a ridge of fands. On one of these islands I found some Spaniards, but they belonged to

to the isle de Trinidad, who came hither in a sloop to make salt, and to try to find some pearl musles. But at length I came fair on the south side of my island, and then I presently knew the countenance of my little kingdom, so we brought the ship safe to an anchor, broadside within the little creek where stood my ancient and venerable castle.

No fooner did I fee the place, but calling for Friday, I asked him where he was? But when he looked a little, he clapped his hands, crying, O joy, O there, O yes, O there! pointing to our old abode, and then fell a dancing and capering as if he was mad, and I had much ado to keep him from jumping into the sea, to swim ashore. Friday faid I, what do you think, shall we go fee your father? At the mentioning his father's name the poor affectionate creature fell a weeping: No no, fays he, me see him no more, never see poor father more! be long ago die, die long ago; he much old man. You don't know that Friday, faid I; but shall we see any body else? He looks about and pointing to the hill above my house, he cries out, We see, we see, there much men, and there! which, though I could not perceive them with my perspective glass, was true, by what the men themselves told me the next day.

When the English ancient was spread, and three guns fired as a signal of friendship, we perceived a smoke rise from the creek; upon which I ordered the boat out, taking Friday with me, and hanging out a white slag of truce, I went on shore, accompanied also by the young friar, to whom I had related the history of the first part

of my life; besides, we had sixteen men well armed, in case we had met with any opposition.

After we had rowed directly into the creek, the first man I fixed my eye upon, was the Spaniard, whose life I had saved, and whose face I perfectly well knew. I ordered them all to flay in the boat for a while, but Friday perceiving his father at a distance, would have jumped into the sea, had they not let the boat go. No fooner was he on shore, but he flew like a fwift arrow out of a bow to embrace his aged father. Certainly it would melt a man of the firmest resolution, into the fostest tears, to see with what uncommon transports of joy he saluted him; he first kissed him, then stroked his face, took him in his arms, laid him under a shady tree, fat down by him. then looked as earnest at him, as one would do at a picture, for a quarter of an hour together. After this, he would lie upon the ground, streke his legs, and kiss them, then get up and stare at him, as though he was bewitched; but the next day one could not forbear laughter to fee his behaviour, for he would walk feveral hours with his father along the shore, leading him by the hand, as though he was a lady, while every now and then he would run to the boat, to get fomething for him, as a lump of fugar, dram, biscuit, or fomething or other that was good. His frolicks ran in another channel in the afternoon; for when he fet old Friday on the ground, he would dance round him, making comical postures and gestures; and all this while would be telling him

him one story or other of his travels and adventures.

It was on the 10th of April, anno 1695, that I fet my foot upon the island a second time. When my faithful Spaniard, accompanied by one more, approached the boat, he little knew who I was, till I discovered myself to him: Seignior, said I, in Portuguese, don't you know me? he spoke never a word, but giving his musket to his attendant, extended his arms, and faying fomething in Spanish, that I did not then understand, he came forward, and embraced me, faying, he was inexcusable, not to know his deliverer; who like an angel fent from heaven, had faved his life. He then beckoned to the man to call out his companions, asking me if I would walk to my own habitation, and take possession, where I should find some mean improvements: but indeed they were extroardinary ones; for they had planted fo many trees fo close together, that the place was like a labyrinth, which none could find out, except themselves, who knew its intricate windings. I asked him the meaning of all these fortifications; he told me he would give me a large. account of what had passed since my departure to this time, and how he had fubdued fome English, who thought to be their murderers, hoping I would not be displeased, since necessity compelled. them to it. As I knew they were wicked villains, so I told him, that I was not only far from finding fault with it, but was rather heartily, glad that they had fubdued them. While we were thus talking, the man whom he had fent returned accompanied,

accompained by eleven more, but in such habits, that it was impossible to tell what nations they were of. He first turned to me, and pointing to them; these, Sir, said he, are some of the gentlemen who owe their lives to your goodness; then turning to them, and pointing to me, he made them sensible who I was: and then indeed they saluted me one by one; not as ordinary men, but as though they had been ambassadors of noblemen, and I a triumphant conqueror; for their behaviour not only agreed with a manlike, majestic gravity, but at the same time was so obliging and courteous, as made them admirable to

the last degree,

Before I relate the history of the transactions of my kingdom, I had it from the Spanjard's own mouth, I must here insert what I omitted in my former relation. The matter is thus: Just be-fore we weighed anchor to fet fail, there happen-ed a quarrel on board the ship, which had like to have occasioned a second mutiny, till such time as the courageous captain, taking two of the most refractory prisoners, laid them in irons, threatening, as they were concerned in the former diforders, to have them hanged in England for running away with the Thip. This frightened some of the rest, as thinking the captain would ferve them in the same manner, though he seemed to give them good words for the present. But the mate hav-ing intelligence of this, made me acquainted with their fears: fo that, to make them more easy, and ourselves more fafe from their conspiracies, I was obliged to go down, and pals my honour's word for it, that, upon their good behaviour, all that

that was past should be pardoned; in testimony of which I ordered the two mens irons to be taken off, and themselves forgiven. But as this had brought us to an anchor that night, in which, there was a calm, the two men that had been in irons Role each of them a mulket, and fome other weapons, and taking the ship's pinnace, not yet haled up, ran away to their brother rogues. The fiext morning we fent the longboat, with men to purfue them; but all in vain; the mate, in hevenge, would have demolished my little castle, burnt its surniture, and destroyed their plantations; but having no orders for it, he did not put it in execution. And thus there were five Englishmen in the island, which caused great differences, as my faithful Spaniard gave, me, a perfect account of, in the following manner. To be

You cannot, Sir but remember the embaffy you fent me about, and what a disappointment we met with by your absence at our return. There is but little variety in the relation of our voyage, being bleffed with calm weather, and a smooth Great indeed was the joy of my countrye fea. men, to fee me alive, having aded as the principal man on board, the captain of the shipwrecked vellel dying before; nor was their furprise less, as, knowing I was taken prisoner by the savages of another nation, they thought me long fince entombed in their monstrous bowels. But when I shewed them the arms, ammunition, and provifions I had brought for them, they looked upon me as a fecond Joseph advanced in Pharaoh's court, and immediately prepared to come along

3653

with me. Indeed they were obliged to trespass upon their friendly favages, by borrowing two of their canoes, under a pretext for filling; and they came away the next morning, but without any provisions of their own, except a few roots, which served them instead of bread. After three weeks ablence, we arrived at your habitation. Here we met with three English failors, who, I confess, gave us provisions, and that letter of directions you had left for us, which informed us how to bring up tame goats, plant corn, cure grapes, make pots; and in short, every thing that was necessary for our use; as, in particular, I knew your method best, fo taking Friday's father to affift me, we managed all the affairs; not were the rest of the Spaniards wanting in their kind offices, drefling food for the Englishmen, who did nothing but ramble and divert themselves in the woods, either shooting parrots, er catching tortoiles. But we had not been long ashore, before we were informed of two more Englishmen, unnamitally turned out of their common place of residence by the three others above mentioned: this made my Spaniards and me (whom they now looked upon as their governor in your absence) endeavour to persuade them to take them in, that we might be as one family; but albour intreaties were in vain, so that the poor fellows finding nothing to be done without induftry, pirched their tents on the north fide of the illand, a little inclining to the west, for fear of lavages. Here they built two huts, one to lodge, and the other to lay their stores in; for

my good-natured Spaniards giving them some seeds, they dug and planted as I had done, and began to live pretuly. But while they were thus comfortably going on, the three unnatural brutes, their countrymen, in a mere bullying humour, infulted them, by faying, the governor (meaning you) had given them possession of the island, and d-min 'em, they thould build no houses upon their ground, without paying rent. The two honest men (for so let me now distinguish them) thought their three countrymen only jested, and one of them invited them in, to fee their fine habitations; while the other facetiously told them, that fince they built tenements, with great im-provements, they should, according to the custom of landlords, give them a longer lease at the fame time defiring them to fetch a firivener to draw the writings. One of the wretches swearing he should pay for the jest, fnatches up a firebrand, and clapping it to the outlide of their hut, very fairly fet it on fire, which would foon have confirmed it, had not the honest man thrust him away, and trod it out with his feet. Hereupon, the fellow returns with a pole, with which he would have ended his days, had not the poor man avoided the blow; when ferching his mulket, he knocked down the villain that began the quarrel. The other two coming to affift their fellow, obliged the honest man to take his musket allo, and both of them presenting their pieces, bid the villains, stand off; and if they did not lay down their arms, death flould decide the diffute one way or other. This brought them to a parlay,

fo

bu

parley, in which they agreed to take their wounded man and be gone; but they were in the wrong that they did not difarm them when they had the power, and then make their complaint to me and my Spaniards for justice, which might have prevented their farther defigns against them. And indeed so many trespasses did they afterwards commit, by treading down their corn, shooting their young kids and goats, and plaguing them night and day, that they resolved to come to my caftle, challenge all the three, and decide their right by one plain battle, while the Spa-niards stood by to see fair play. One day it happened, that two of my Spaniards (one of whom understood English) being in the woods, were met by one of the honest men, who complained how barbarous their countrymen had been in destroying their corn, killing their milch-goar, and three kids, which deprived them of their sublistence; that if we did not grant them relief, they must be inevitably starved: and so they parted; but when my Spaniards came home at night, and supper being on the table, one of them began to reprehend the Englishmen; but in a very mannerly way, which they refenting, replied, what business had their countrymen there without leave, when it was none of their ground? Why, faid my Spaniard, calmly, Inglese, they must not starve; but they replied, let them starve and be d-n'd, they should neither plant nor build, and d-mn them they should be their fervants, and work for them, for the island was theirs, and they would burn all the hurs they should find in the land.

By this rule, faid my Spaniard, smilling, we shall be your fervants too. Aye, by G-d, and fo you shall, replied the impudent rascal. Upon which, starting up. Will. Atkins cries, Come, Jack, let's have t'other brush with them; who dare to build in our dominions? Thus leaving us fomething heated with a just passion, away they trooped, every man having a gun, pistol, and fword, muttering some threatening words, that we could then but imperfectly understand. That night they designed to murder their two companions, and slept till midnight in the bower, thinking to fall upon them in their sleep: nor were the honest men less thoughtful concerning them; for at this juncture they were coming to find them out, but in a much fairer way. As foon as the villains came to the huts, and found nobody there, they concluded that I and my Spaniards had given them notice, and therefore fwore to be revenged on us. Then they demolished the poor mens habitation; not by fire, as they attempted before, but pulled down their houses, limb from limb, not leaving stick nor stone on the ground where they stood; broke their houshold stuff in pieces; tore up their trees, spoiled their inclosures, and, in short, quite ruined them of every thing they had. Had these people met together, no doubt but there would have been a bloody battle; but Providence ordered it for the better; for just as the three were got thirher, the two were at our castle; and when they left us, the three came back again, but in a great rage, scoffingly telling us what they had done; when

when one taking hold of a Spaniard's hat, twirls it round, faying, And you, Seignior Jack Spaniard, shall have the same sauce, if you don't mend your manners. My Spaniard, a grave, but courageous man knocked him down with one blow of his fist; at which another villain fired his pistol, and narrowly missed his body, but wounded him a little in the ear. Hereat enraged, the Spaniard takes up the fellow's musket whom he had knocked down, and would have shot him, if I and the rest had not come out, and taken

their arms from every one of them.

e

1

r

-

r

t

y

lt

These Englishmen perceiving they had made all of us their enemies, began to cool; but notwithstanding their better words, the Spaniards would not return them their arms again; telling them, they would do them no manner of harm, if they would live peaceably; but if they offered any injury to the plantation or caltle, they would shoot them as they would do ravenous beasts. This made them so mad, that they went away raging like suries of hell. They were no sooner gone, but in came the two honest men fired with the justest rage if such can be, having been ruined as aforesaid. And indeed it was very hard, that nineteen of us should be bullied by three villains continually offending with impunity.

It was a great while, Sir, before we could perfuade the two Englishmen from pursuing, and undoubtedly killing them with their fire-arms; but we promised them justice should be done them, and in the mean time they should reside with us in our habitation. In about five days after, these three

X 2

vagrants.

vagrants, almost flarved with hunger, drew near our grove, and perceiving me, the governor, and two others, walking by the fide of the creek, they very fubmissively defired to be received into the family again. We told them of their great incivility to us, and of their unnatural barbarity to their countrymen; but yet we would fee what the rest agreed to, and in half an hour's time would bring them word. After some debate, we called them in, where their two countrymen laid a heavy charge against them, for not only ruining, but defigning to murder them, which they could not deny. But here I was forced to interpole as a mediator, by obliging the two Englishmen nor to hurt them, being naked and unarmed; and that the other three should make them restitution, by building their two huts, and fencing their ground in the same manner as it was before. Well, being in a miserable condition, they submitted to this at prefent, and lived some time regularly enough, except as to the working part which they did not care for; but the Spaniards would have dispensed with that, had they continued easy and quiet. Their arms being given hem again, they scarce had them a week, when they became as troublesome as ever; but an accident happening soon after, obliged us to lay aside private resentments, and look to our common prefervation.

One night, Sir, I went to bed, perfectly well in health, and yet by no means could I compose myself to sleep: upon which, being very uneasy, I got up and looked out; but it being dark, I could see nothing but trees around our castle: I went to bed

again,

again, but it was all one, I could not sleep; when one of my Spaniards hearing me walk about, asked who was up? I answered, It is I. When I told him the occasion; Sir, said he, such things are not to be flighted; for certainly there is some mischief: plotting near us. Where are the Englishmen? faid I, he answered in their huts; for they lay feparate from us, Sir, fince the last mutiny. Well, faid I, some kind spirit gives this information for our advantage. Come let us go abroad, and fee if any thing offers to justify our fears. Upon which I and some of my Spaniards went up the mountain, not by the ladder, but through the grove; and then we were struck with a panic fear, on seeing a light, as though it were a fire, at a very little diftance, and hearing the voice of several men. Hereupon we retreated immediately, and raising the rest of our forces, made them sensible of the impending danger: but, with all my authority, I could not make them stay where they were, for earnest were they to see how things went. Indeed the darkness of the night gave them opportunity enough to view them (by the light of their fire) undiscovered. As they were in different parties, and straggling over the shore, we were much afraid that they should find out our habitations, and destroy our flocks of goats; to prevent which, wefent an Englishman and two Spaniards to drive the goats into the valley where the cave lay; or, if there was occasion, into the cave itself. As to ourfelves, refuming our native courage, and prudent conduct, had we not been divided, we durft venture to attack a hundred of them; but before it

was yet light, we resolved to send out Friday's father as a spy, who immediately striping himself naked, gets among them undiscovered, and in two hours time brings word, that they were two parties of two different nations, who lately having a bloody battle with one another, happened to land by mere chance in the same island, to devour their miserable prisoners; that they were entirely ignorant of any person's inhabiting here; but rather being silled with rage and sury against one another, he believed, that as soon as day-light appeared, there would be a terrible engagement. Old Friday had scarce ended his relation, when we heard an uncommon noise, and perceived that there was a horrid engagement between the two armies.

Such was the curiofity of our party, especially the Englishmen, that they would not lie close, though old Friday told them their safety depended upon it; and that if we had patience, we should behold the savages kill one another. However, they used some caution, by going further into the woods, and placing themselves in a convenient place to be-

hold the battle.

Never could there be a more bloody engagement, nor men of more invincible spirits, and prudent conduct, according to their way and manner of fighting. It lasted near two hours, till that party which was nearest to our castle began to decline, and at last to fly from their conquerors. We were undoubtedly put into a great consternation on this account, lest they should run into our grove, and consequently bring us into the like danger. Hereupon we resolved to kill the first that

our swords, and the butt-end of our muskets, for fear the report of our guns should be heard.

And so indeed, as we thought, it happened; for three of the vanquished army crossing the creek. ran directly to the place as to a thick wood for shelter; nor was it long before our fcout gave us notice of it; as also, that the victors did not think fit to pursue them. Upon this I would not suffer them to be flain, but had them furprised and taken by our party; and afterwards they proved very good fervants to us, being flout young creatures, and able to do a great deal of work. The remainder of the conquered favages fled to their canoes, and put out into the ocean, while the conquerors joining together, shouted by way of triumph: and about three in the afternoon they also imbarked for their own nation. Thus we were freed at once from the favages and our fears, not perceiving any of these creatures for some considerable time after. We found two and thirty men dead in the field of battle; fome were flain with long arrows, which we found sticking in their bodies; and the rest were killed with great unwieldy wooden fwords, which denoted their vast strength, and of which we found seventeen, besides bows and arrows: for we could not find one wounded creature among them alive; for they either kill their enemies quite, or carry those wounded away with them.

This terrible fight tamed the Englishmen for some time, considering how unfortunate they might have been, had they fallen into their hands, who would not only kill them as enemies, but also for

food,

food, as we do cattle; and indeed so much did this nauseate their stomachs, that it not only made them very sick, but more tractable to the common necessary business of the whole society, planting, sowing, and reaping, with the greatest signs of amity and friendship: so that now being all good friends, we began to consider of circumstances in general; and the first thing we thought of, was, whether, as we perceived the savages haunted that side of the island, and there being more retired parts of it, and yet as well suited to our manner of living, and equally to our advantage, we thought to move our place of residence, and plant it in a much safer place, both for the security of our corn and cattle?

After a long bebate on this head, it was refolved, or rather voted, nemine contradicente, not to remove our ancient castle, and that for this very good reason, that some time or other we expected to hear from our supreme governor (meaning you, Sir) whose messengers not finding us there, might think the place demolished, and all his subjects

destroyed by the favages.

As to the next concern relating to our corn and cattle, we confented to have them removed to the valley, where the cave was, that being most proper and sufficient for both. But yet, when we considered further, we altered one part of our resolution; which was, to remove part of our cattle thither, and plant only part of our corn there; so that in case one part was destroyed, the other might be preserved. Another resolution we took which really had a great deal of prudence in it; and that was, in not trusting the three savages whom we had

taken prisoners, with any knowledge of the plantations which we had made in that valley, of what number of cattle we had there, much less of the cave, wherein where kept several arms, and two barrels of powder you left for us, at your departure from this island. But though we would not change our habitation, we refolved to make it more fortified and more fecret. To this end, Sir, as you had planted trees at some distance before the entrance of your palace; fo we, imitating your example, planted and filled up that whole space of ground, even to the banks of the creek, nay, into the very ooze, where the tide flowed, not leaving a place for landing: and among those I had planted they had intermingled fo many fhort ones, all of which growing wonderfully fast and thick, a little : dog fearcely could find a paffage through them. Nor was this fufficient, as we thought; for we did : the same to all the ground, to the right and lest hand of us, even to the top of the hill, without fo much as leaving a paffage for ourselves except by the ladder; which being taken down, nothing but : what had wings or witchcraft could pretend to come near us. And indeed this was exceedingly well contrived, especially to serve that occasion, for which we afterwards found it necessary.

Thus we lived two years in a happy retirement, having all this time not one visit from the savages. Indeed one morning we had an alarm, which put us in some amazement; for a few of my Spaniards being out very early, perceived no less than twenty canoes, as it were coming on shore; upon which returning home with great

precipitation,

precipitation, they gave us the alarm, which obliged us to keep at home all that day, and the next, going out only in the night-time to make our observations: but as good luck would have it, they were upon another design, and did not

land that time upon the illand.

But now there happened another quarrel between the three wicked Englishmen, and some of my Spaniards. The occasion was this: One of them being enraged at one of the favages, whom he had taken prisoner, for not being able to comprehend fomething which he was shewing him, fnatched up a hatchet in a great fury, not to correct, but to kill him; yet missing his head, gave him such a barbarous cut in the shoulder, that he had like to have struck off-his arm; at which one of my good-natured Spaniards interpoling between the Englishmen and favage, befeeched the former not to murder the poor creature; but this kindness had like to have cost the Spaniard his life, for the Englishman struck at him in the same manner; which he nimb'y and wifely avoiding, returned suddenly upon him with his shovel (being all at work about their corn-land), and very fairly knocked the brutish creature down. Hereupon another Englishman, coming to his fellow's affistance, laid the good Spaniard on the earth; when immediately two others coming to his relief, were attacked by the third Englishman, armed with an old cutlass, who wounded them both. This uproar foon reached our ears, when we rushing out upon them, took the three Englishmen prisoners: and then

our next question was, what should be done to such mutinous and impudent fellows, so surious, desperate, and idle, that they were mischievous to the highest degree, and consequently not safe for the society to let them live among them.

Now, Sir, as I was governor in your absence, so I also took the authority of a judge; and having them brought before me, I told them, that if they had been of my country, I would have hanged every mother's son of them; but since it was an Englishman (meaning you, kind Sir) to whom we were indebted for our preservation and deliverance, I would in gratitude use them with all possible mildness; but at the same time leave them to the judgment of the other two Englishmen, who, I hoped, forgetting their resentments, would deal impartially by them.

Hereupon one of his countrymen stood up:

Hereupon one of his countrymen stood up: Sir, said he, leave it not to us, for you may be sensible we have reason to sentence them to the gallows: besides, Sir, this fellow, Will. Atkins, and the two others, proposed to us that we might murder you all in your sleep, which we would not consent to; but knowing their inability, and your vigilance, we did not think fit to discover it before

now.

How, Seignior, said I, do you hear what is alleged against you? what can you say to justify so horrid an action, as to murder us in cold blood? So far, Sir, was the wretch from denying it, that he swore, d—ma him but he would do it still. But what have we done to you, Seignior Atkins, said I, or what will you gain by killing

us? What shall we do to prevent you? Must we kill you, or you kill us? Why will you, Seignior Atkins, (faid I, Imiling), put us to fuch an unhappy dilemma, finch a fatal necessity? But fo great a rage did my scoffing, and yet severe jest, put him into, that he was going to fly at me, and undoubtedly had attempted to kill me, if he had been poffessed of weapons, and had not been prevented by three Spaniards. This unparalled and villanous carriage, made us feriously confider what was to be done. The two Englishmen and the Spaniard, who had faved the poor indian's life mightily petitioned me to hang one of them, for an example, to the others, which should be him that had twice attempted to commit murder with his hatchet, it being at that time thought impossible the poor save should recover. But they could never gain my confent to put him to death, for the reasons above mentioned, fince it was an Englishman (even yourself) who was my deliverer; and as merciful counfels are most prevailing, when earnestly pressed, so I got them to be of the same opinion as to elemency. But, to prevent their doing us any further mifchief, we all agreed, that they should have no weapons, as sword, gun, powder, or shot, but be expelled from the fociety, to live as they pleased, by themselves: that neither the two Englishmen, nor the rest of the Spaniards, should have conversation with them upon any account whatfoever: that they should be kept from coming within a certain distance of our castle; and if they dared to offer us any violence, either by burning, killing,

killing, or destroying, any of the corn, plantings, buildings fencings or cattle belonging to the society we would shoot them as freely as we would do beasts of prey, in whatsoever places we should find them.

This sentence seemed very just to all but themselves; when like a merciful judge I called out to the two honest Englishmen, saying, You must consider they ought not to be starved neither; and fince it will be fome time before they can raise corn and cattle of their own, let us give them some corn to last them eight months, and for feed to fow, by which time they'll raife fome for themselves: let us also bestow upon them fix milch goats, four he-ones and fix kids, as well for their present support, as for a further increase; with tools necessary for their work, as hatchets, an axe, faw, and other things convenient to build them huts: all which were agreed to; but before they took them in pofsession, I obliged them solemnly to swear, never to attempt any thing against us or their countrymen for the future. Thus dismissing them from our fociety, they went away, fullen and refractory, as though neither willing to go nor stay: however, feeing no remedy, they took what provifion was given them, propofing to chuse a convenient place, where they might live by themfelves.

About five days after, they came to those limits appointed, in order for more victuals, and tent me word by one of my Spaniards, whom they called to, where they had pitched their tents,

and marked themselves out an habitation and plantation, at the N. E. and most remote part of the island. And indeed there they built themselves two very handsome cottages, resembling our little castle, being under the side of a mountain, with some trees already growing on three sides of it; so that planting a few more, it would have been obscured from light, unless particularly sought for. When these huts were finished, we gave them some dry goats skins for bedding and covering; and upon their giving us fuller assurances of their good behaviour for the future, we gave them some pease, barley, and rice for sowing, and whatever tools we could

fpare.

Six months did they live in this feparate condition, in which they got their first harvest in, the quantity of which was but small, because they had planted but little land: for indeed, all their plantations being to form, made it the more difficult, especially as it was a thing out of their element: and when they were obliged to make their boards and pots, &c. they could make little on nothing of it. But the rainy season coming on, put them into a greater perplexity for want of a cave to keep their corn dry, and prevent it from spoiling: and so much did this humble them, that they begged of my Spaniards to help them, to which the good-natured men readily consented, and in four days space worked a great hole in the side of the hill for them, large enough for their purpose, to secure their corn and other things from the rain, though

though not comparable to ours, which had feveral

additional apartments.

But a new whim possessed these rogues about three quarters of a year after, which had like to have ruined us, and themselves too: for, it seems being tired and weary of this sort of living, which made them work for themselves, without hopes of changing their condition, nothing would serve them, but they would make a voyage to the continent, and try if they could seize upon some of the savages, and bring them over as slaves, to do their drudgery, while they

lived at ease and pleasure.

Indeed the project was not fo preposterous, if they had not gone farther; but they neither did, nor proposed any thing, but what had mischief in the design, or the event. One morning these three fellows came down to the limited fation, and humbly defired to be admitted to talk with us; which we readily granted; they told us, in thort, that being tired of their manner of living, and the labour of their hands, in such employments, not being sufficient to procure the necessaries of life, they only defired one of the canoes we came over in, with some arms and ammunition, for their defence and they would feek sheir fortunes abroad, and never trouble us any To be fure, we were glad enough to get rid of such wretched plagues; but yet honesty made us ingeniously represent to them, by what we ourselves had suffered, the certain destruction they were running into, either of being sarved to death, or murdered by the favages. dance

To this they very audaciously replied, that they neither could nor would work; and consequently, that they might as well be starved abroad as at home: and as to their falling into the hands of the savages, why, if they were murdered, that was nothing to us, there was an end of them; neither had they any wives or children to cry after them; nay so intent were they upon their voyage, that if the Spaniards had not given them arms, so they had but the canoe, they would have gone without them.

Though we could not well spare our fire-arms, rather than they should go like naked men, we let them have two muskets, a pistol, a cutlace, and three hatchets, which were thought very sufficient; we gave them also goats sless, a great basket sull of dried grapes, a pot of fresh butter, a young live kid, and large cance sufficient to carry twenty men. And thus, with a mass, made of a long pole, and a fail of six large goats skins dried, having a fair breeze, and a sloodtide with them, they merrily sailed away, the Spaniards calling after them bon veyajo no man expecting to see them more.

When they were gone, the Spaniards and Englishmen would often fay one to another, O how peaceable do we now live, fince those turbulent fellows have left us? Nothing could be farther from their thoughts, than to behold their faces any more: and yet scarce two and twenty days had passed over their heads, but one of the Englishmen being abroad a-planting, perceived at a distance, three men well armed, approaching towards him.

Away

Away he flies with speed to our castle, and tells me and the rest that we were all undone, for that strangers had landed upon the island, and who they were he could not tell; but added, that they were not favages, but men habited, bearing arms. Why then, faid I, we have the less occasion to be conserned, fince if they are not Indians, they must be friends; for I am fure, there is no Christian people upon earth, but what will do us good rather than barm. But while we were confidering of the event, up came the three Englishmen, whose voices we quickly knew, and so all our admiration of that nature ceased at once. And our wonder was fucceeded by another fort of inquiry, which was, what could be the occasion of their returning fo quickly to the island, when we little expected, and much less defired their company? But as this was beiter to be related by themselves. I ordered obem to be brought is, when they gave me the following relation of their voyage. The solog and a los abana

reached land, where they found the people coming to give them another for of reception than what they expected or defired: for as the favages were armed with bows and arrows, they durft not venture on shore, but steered northward, fix or seven bours, till they gained an opening, by which they plainly perceived, that the land that appeared from this place, was not the main land, but the islands shitcheir entrance into the opening of the sea, they discovered another island, on the right hand northward, and several more lying to the westward; but being resolved to go on shore some where or your.

Y 3 other

Other, they put over to one of the western illands. Here they found the natives very courteous to them, giving them several roots and dried sish; nay even their women too were as willing to supply them with what they could procure to eat, bringing it a great way to them upon their heads. Among these hospitable Indians they continued some days, inquiring by signs and tokens, what nations lay around them; and were informed, that there were several sierce and terrible people lived enery way, accustomed to eat mankind: but for themselves, they never used such diet, except those that were taken in battle, and of them they made a solemu scass.

The Englishmen inquired, how long it was fince they had a feast of that kind? they answered, about two moons ago, pointing to the moon, and then to two fingers; that, at this time, their king had two hundred prisoners; which were fattening up for the slaughter. The Englishmen were mighty defirous of feeing the prisoners; which the others mistaking, thought that they wanted some of them for their own food : upon which they beckoned to them, pointing to the rising, and then to the fetting of the fun; meaning that by the time that it appeared in the east next morning, they would bring them fome and indeed they were as good as their word; for by that time they "brought eleven men and five women, just as fo many cows and oxen are brought to fea-port towns to victual a thip. But as brutish as these Englishmen were, their stomachs turned at the fight. What to do in this case, they could not tell the refuse

fule the prisoners, would have been the highest affront offered to the favage gentry; and to dispose of them, they knew not in what manner: howeven, they resolved to accept of them, and so gave them; in return, one of their hatchets, an old key, a knife, and fix or feven of their bullets: things which though they were wholly ignorant of, yet feemed entirely contented with; and dragging the poor wretches into the boat, with their hands bound behind them, delivered them to the Englishmen. But this obliged them to put off as foon as they had these presents, lest the doners should have expected two or three of them to be killed, and to be invited to dinner the next day; and fo taking leave, with all possible respect and thanks, though neither of them understood what the others faid, they failed away back to the first island, and there fet eight of the prisoners at liberty. In their voyage, they endeavoured to comfort, and have fome convertation with the poor captives; but it was impossible to make them sensible of any shing; and nothing they could fay, or give or do for them, could make them otherwise persuaded, abut that they were unbound only to be devoured: of they gave them any food, thought it was only to facten them for the flaughter; or looked at any went more particularly, the poor creature supposed vitelf to be the first facrifice: and even when we obrought them to the island, and began to use them emith the greatest humanity and kindness; yet they expected every day that their new masters would were, their Comsells rarne meth ruotsbe. And thus, Sir, did these three strange wander-

crs

Shirt .

ers conclude their unaccountable relation of their voyage which was amazing and entertaining, Hereupon I asked them, where their new family was? they told me, they had put them into one of their huts, and they came to beg some vicinals for them. This indeed made us all long to fee them; and so taking Friday's father with us, leaving only two at our castle, we came down to behold these poor creatures.

ALE HILLE

When we arrived at the hut (they being bound again by the Englishmen, for fear of escaping) se found them stark naked, expecting their fatal tragedy; there were their lusty men, well shaped with strait and fair limbs, between thirty and five and thirty years old; and five women, two of them might be from thirty to forty, two more not above four and twenty; and the last a comely. sall maiden of about seventeen, Judeed, all the women were very agreeable, both in their proportion and features, except that they were tawny, which their modest behaviour and other. graces made amends for, when they afterwards This naked appearance, together with their

miferable circumstances, was no very comfortable fight to my Spaniards, who for their parts, I may venture, Sir, without flattery to fay, are men of the best behaviour, calmest tempers, and sweetest. manure, that can possibly be; for they immer, diately ordered Friday's father to see it he knew any of them, or if he understood what they could fay. No fooner did the old Indian. appear, but he looked at them with great leriquiness;

ness; yet as they were not of his nation, they were utter strangers to him, and none could understand his speech or signs, but one woman. This was enough to answer the delign, which was to affure them they would not be killed, being fal-len into the hands of Christians, who abnorred such barbarity. When they were fully satisfied of this, they expressed their joy, by such strange gestures, and uncommon tones, as it is not possible for me to describe. But the woman, their in-terpreter, was ordered next to enquire, whether they were content to be servants, and would work for the men, who had brought them hither to fave their lives? Hereupon (being by this time unbound) they fell a capering and dancing, one taking this thing upon his shoulders, and the other that, intimating, that they were willing to do any thing for them. But now Sir, having women a mong us, and dreading that it might occasion some strife, if not blood, I asked the three men what they would do, and how they intended to use these creatures, whether as servants or women? One of them very pertly and readily answered," they would use them as both. Gentlemen, faid I, as you are your own masters, I am not going to restrain you from that; but, methinks, for avoiding dissensions among you, I would only desire you to engage, that none of you will take more than one for a woman or wife; and that having taken this one, none else should presume to touch her; for though we have not a priestly authority to marry you, yet it is but reasonable, that who-ever thus takes a woman, should be obliged to maintain

maintain her, fince nobody elfe has any thing to do with her; and this indeed appeared to just to all prefent, that it was unanimously agreed to. The Englishmen then ofked my Spaniards whether they deligned to take any of them? but they all answered No; some declaring they had already wives in Spain; and others, that they cared not to join with infidels. On the reverse, the Englishmen took each of them a temporary wife, and fo fet up a new method of living. As to Friday's father, the Spaniards, and the three favage fervants we had taken in the late battle, they all lived with me in our antient caftle; and indeed we supplied the main part of the illand with food, as necessary required. But the most remarkable part of the ftory is, how these Englishmen who had been so much at variance, should agree about the choice of these women; yet they took a way good enough to prevent quarrelling among themselves. they fet the five women in one of their huts, and going themselves to the other, drew lots which should have the first choice. Now he that had the first lot went to the hut, and fetched out her He chose: and it is remarkable, that he took her that was the most homely and eldest of the number, which made the rest of the Englishmen exseeding merry; the Spaniards themselves could not but fmile at it; but as it happened, the fellow had the best thought, in chusing one fit for application and business; and indeed she proved the belt wife of all the parcel. In to mendy be yound

But when the poor creatures perceived them-

3 300

selves placed in a row, and seperated one by one they were again seized with an unspeakable rerror, as now thinking they were going to be flain in estructs: and when the Englishman came to take the first, the rest set up a lamentable cry, clapt their arms around her neck, and hanging about her took their last farewell, as they thought in such trembling agonies, and affectionate embraces, as would have softened the hardest heart in the world, and made the driest eyes melt in tears; nor could they be persuaded, but that they were going to die, till such time as Friday's father made them sensible that the Englishmen had chosen them for their wives, which ended all their terror and concern upon this occasion.

Well, after this the Englishmen went to work and being affifted by my good-natured Spaniards in a few hours they crected every one of them a new hut or tent, for their seperate lodging, fince those they had already were filled with tools, houshold stuff, and provision. They all continued en the north shore of the island, but feperare as before; the three wicked ones pitching farther off, and the two honest men nearer our castle; so that the island seemed to be peopled in three places, three towns beginning to be built for that purpose. And here I cannot but remark what is very common, that the two honest men had the worst wives, (I mean as to industry cleanlinefs, and ingenuity) while the three reprobates enjoyed women of quite contrary qualities.

But another observation I made was, in favour of the two honest men, to shew what disparity

there

there is between a diligent application to bulinels, on the one hand, and a flothful, negligent, and idle temper, on the other. Both of them had the fame parcel of ground laid out, and corn to fow, fufficient for them: but both did not make the fame improvements, either in their cultivation or in their planting. The two honest men had a multitude of young trees planted about their habitations, so that when you approached near them, nothing appeared but a wood, very pleasant and delightful. Every thing they did prospered and flourished; their grapes planted in order, seemed as tho' managed in a vineyard, and were infinitely preferable to any of the others. Nor were they wanting to find out a place of retreat, but dug a cave in the most retired part of a thick wood, to fecure their wives and children, with their provifion, and chiefest goods, surrounded with innumerable stakes, and having a most subtle entrance in case any mischief should happen eitheir from their fellow countrymen, or the devouring favages.

As to the reprobates (though I must own they were much more civilized than before), instead of a delightful wood surrounding their dwellings, we found the words of king Solomon too truely verified: I went by the vineyard of the slothful, and it was all overgrown with thorns. In many places their crop was obscured by weeds; the hedges having several gaps in them, the wild goats had got in, and eaten up the corn, and here and there was a dead bush, to stop in those gaps for the present, which was no more than shutting the

But as to their wives, they (as I observed before) were more diligent, and cleanly enough, especially in their victuals, being instructed by one of the honest men, who had been a cook's mare on board a ship; and very well it was so; for as he cooked himself, his companion and their families lived as well as the idle husbands, who did nothing but loiter about, fetch turtles eggs, catch fish and birds, and do any thing but work, and lived accordingly, while the diligent lived very hand-somely and plentifully; in the most comfortable manner.

And now Sir, I come to lay before your eyes a scene quite different from any thing that ever happened to us before, and perhaps ever befel you in all the time of your residence on this island. I shall inform you of its original in the following manner.

One morning, Sir, very early, there came five or fix canoes of Indians on shore, indisputably upon their old custom of devouring their prisoners. All that we had to do upon such an occasion, was to lie concealed, that they, not having any notice of inhabitants, might depart quietly, after performing their bloody execution: whoever sirst discovered these savages, was to give notice to all the three plantations to keep within doors, and then a proper scout was to be placed to give intelligence of their departure. But notwithstanding these wise measures, an unappy disaster discovered us to the savages, which was like to have caused the desolation of the whole island: for af-

Z

of my Spaniards and I looking abroad, and being inflamed with a curiofity to fee what they had been doing, to our great amazement, beheld three favages fast asleep on the ground, who, either being gorged, could not awake when the others went off, or having wandered too far into the woods, did not come back in time.

What to do with them at first, we could not tell; as for slaves, we had enough of them already; and as to killing them, neither Christianity nor humanity would suffer us to shed the blood of perfons who never did us wrong. We perceived they had no boat left them to transport them to their own nation; and that by letting them wander about, they might discover us, and inform the first savages that should happen to land upon the same bloody occasion, which information might entirely ruin us; and therefore I counselled my Spaniards to secure them, and set them about some work or other, till we could better dispose of them.

Hereupon we all went back, and making them twake, took them prisoners. It is impossible to express the horror they were in, especially when bound, as thinking they was going to be murdered and eaten, but we soon eated them of their sear as to that point. We first took them to the bower, where the chief of our country-work lay, as keeping goats, planting corn, &c, and then carried them to the two Englishmens habitation to help them in their business: but happy it was for us all, we did not carry them to our castle, as by the sequel will appear. The Englishmen indeed found them work

work to do; but whether they did not guard them strictly, or that they thought they could not better themselves, I cannot tell; but certainly one of them ran away into the wood, and they could not

hear of him for a long time after.

Undoubtedly there was reason enough to suppose he got home in some of the canoes, the savages returning in about four weeks time, and going off in the the space of two days. You may be certain Sir, this thought could not but terrify us exceedingly, and make us justly conclude, that this savage would inform his countrymen of our abode in the island, how few and weak we were in comparison to their numbers; and we expected it would not be long before the Englishmen would be attacked in their habitations: but the savages had not seen their places of safety in the wood, nor our castle, which it was a great happiness they did not know.

Nor were we mistaken in our thoughts upon this occasion; for about eight months after this, fix canoes, with about ten men in each canoe came failing by the north fide of the island, which they were never accustomed to do before, and landed about an hour after sun-rise, near a mile from the dwelling of the two Englishmen, who, it feems, had the good fortune to discover them about a league off; fo that it was an hour before they could attain the shore, and some longer time before they could come at them. And now being confirmed in this opinion, that they were certainly betrayed, they immediately bound the two flaves which were left, causing two of the three Z 2 men,

men, whom they brought with the women, and who proved very faithful, to lead them with their wives, and other conveniencies, into their retired cave in the wood, and there to bind the two fellows hand and foot, till they had further orders. They then opened their fences where they kept their milch goats, and drove them all out, giving the goats liberty to ramble in the woods, to make the favages believe that they were wild ones; but the slave had given a truer information, which made them come to the very inclosures. The two frighted men fent the other flave of the three, who had been with them by accident, to alarm the Spaniards and defire their affistance; in the mean time, they took their arms and ammunition, and made to the cave where they had fent their wives, and fecuring their flaves, feated themselves in a private place, from whence they might behold all the actions of the favages. Nor had they gone far, when ascending a rising ground, they could fee a little army of Indians approach to their beautiful dwelling, and in a few moments more, perceive the fame, and their furniture, to their unspeakable grief, burning in a consuming flame; and when this was done, they spread here and there, fearthing every bush and place for the people, of whom it was very evident they had information. Upon which the two Englishmen, not thinking themselves secure where they stood, retreated about half a mile higher in the country, rightly concluding, that the farther the favages strolled, there would be lesser numbers together: upon which they next took their stand by the trunk

trunk of an old tree, very hollow and large, whence they resolved to see what would offer: but they had not flood long there before two favages came running directly towards them, as though having knowledge of their being there, who feemed resolved to attack them; a little farther were three more, and five more behind them again, all running the same way. It cannot be imagined what perplexity the poor men were in at this fight, thinking that if affiftance did not speedily come, their cave in the wood would be discovered, and consequently all therein lost: fo they resolved to resist them there; and when overpowered, to ascend to the top of the trees, where they might defend themselves as long as their ammunition lasted, and sell their lives as dear as possible to those devouring favages. Thus fixed in their resolution, they next confidered, whether they should fire at the first two, or wait for the three, and fo take the middle party, by which the two first and the five last would be seperated. In this regulation the two favages also confirmed them, by turning a little to another part of the wood; but the three, and the five after them, came directly towards the tree. Hereupon they resolved to take them in a direct line, as they approached nearer, because perhaps the first shot might hit them all three; and upon this occasion, the man who was to fire, charged his piece with three or four bullets. And thus while they were waiting, the favages came on, one of them was the runaway, who had caused all the mischief; so they resolved he should not escape, Z 3

if they both fired at once. But however, though they did not fire together, they were ready charged; when the first that let sly, was too good a markiman to miss his aim; for he killed the foremost outright, the second (who was the runaaway Indian) fell on the ground, being shot through the body, but not dead, and the third was a little wounded on the shoulder, who sitting down on the ground, fell a screaming in a most fearful manner. The noise of the guns, which not only made the most resounding echoes, from one fide to another, but raifed the birds of all forts, fluttering with the most confused noise, so much terrified the five favages behind, that they flood still at first, like so many inanimate images. But when all things were in profound silence, they came to the place where their companions lay: and here not being sensible that they were liable to the same fate, stood over the wounded man, undoubted y inquiring the occasion of his fad calamity; and 'tis as reasonable to suppose he told them, that it came by thunder and lightning from the gods, having never feen or heard of a gun before, in the whole course of their lives. By this time the Englishmen, having loaded their pieces, fired both together a fecond time, when feeing them all fall immediately upon the ground, they thought they had killed every creature of them. This made them come up boldly before they had charged their guns, which indeed was a wrong step; for when they came to the place, they found four alive, two of them very little wounded, and one not at all, which obliged them

to fall upon them with their muskets: they first knocked the runaway favage on the head, and another that was but a little wounded in the arm, and then put the other languishing wretches out of their pain; while he that was not hurt, with bending knees, and uplifted hands, made piteous moans, and figns to them to spare his life: nor indeed were they unmerciful to the poor wretch, but pointed to him to fit down at the root of a tree hard by, and then one of the Englishmen, with a piece of ropetwine he had in his pocket by mere chance, tying his two feet fast together, and his two hands behind him, they left him there, making all the haste they could after the other two, fearing they should find out their cave; but though they could not overtake them, they had the satisfaction to perceive them at a distance, crofs a valley towards the fea, a quite contrary way to their retreat: upon which they returned to the tree, to look after their prisoner; but when they came there, he was gone, leaving the pieces of ropeyarn, wherewith he was bound, behind him.

Well, now they were as much concerned as ever, as not knowing how near their enemies might be, or in what numbers; immediately they repaired to their cave, to fee if all was well there, and found every thing fafe, except the women, who were frighted upon their hutbands account, whom now they loved entirely. They had not been long here, before feven of my Spaniards came to affift them; while the other ten, their fervants, and Friday's father, were gone

gone to defend their bower, corn, and cattle, in case the savages should have rambled so far. There accompanied the feven Spaniards, one of the three savages, that had formerly been taken prisoner; and with them also, that very Indian whom the Englishmen had a little before left under the tree; for it seems they passed by that way where the flaughter was made, and fo carried along with them that poor wretch that was left bound. But so many prisoners now becoming a burthen to us, and fearing the dreadful consequence of their escaping, most of the Spaniards and English urged the absolute necessity there was of killing then, for our common preservation; but, Sir, the authority I bore as a governor, over-ruled that piece of cruelty; and then I ordered them to be fent prisoners to the old cave in the valley, bound hands and feet, with two Spaniards to guard them.

So much encouraged were the Englishmen at the approach of the Spaniards, and so great was their sury against the savages, for destroying their habitations, that they had not patience to stay any longer; but taking sive Spaniards along with them, armed with four muskets, a pistol, and a quarterstaff, away they went in pursuit of their enemies. As they passed by the place where the savages were slain, it was very easy to be perceived that more of them had been there, having attempted to carry off their dead bodies, but found it impracticable. From a rising ground our party had the mortification to see the smoke that proceeded from the ruins; when coming farther in the

the fight of the shore, they plainly perceived that the savages had embarked in their canoes, and were puting out to sea. This they were very forry for, there being no coming at them to give them a parting salute; but however, they were glad enough to get clear of such unwelcome

guests.

Thus the two honest, but unfortunate Englishmen, being ruined a second time, and their improvements quite destroyed, most of my goodnatured Spaniards helped them to rebuild, and we all assisted them with needful supplies; nay what is more remarkable, their three mischievous countrymen, when they heard it, (which was after all these disasters were over, they living remote eastward) very friendly sympathised with them, and worked for them several days; so that in a little time their habitation was rebuilt, their necessities supplied, and themselves restored to their former tranquility.

Though the favages had nothing to boast of in this adventure, (several canoes being driven ashore, followed by two drowned creatures having undoubtedly met with a storm at sea that very night they departed) yet it was natural to be supposed, that those whose better fortune it was to attain their native shore, would instame their nation to another ruinous attempt, with a greater force, to carry all before them. And indeed so it happened; for about seven months after, our island was invaded with a most formidable navy, no less than eight and twenty canoes full of savages, armed

with

with wooden fwords, monstrous clubs, bows and arrows, and such like instruments of war, landing at the east side of the island.

You may well, Sir, imagine, what consternation our men were in on this account, and how speedy they were to execute their resolution. having only that night's time allowed them. They knew, that fince they could not withstand their enemies, concealment was the only way to procure their fafety: and therefore they took down the huts that were built for the two Englishmen, and drove their flock of goats, together with their own at the bower, to the old cave in the valley, leaving as little appearance of inhabitants as possible; and then posted, themfelves, with all their force, at the plantation of the two men. As they expected, so it happened; for early the next morning the Indians leaving their canoes at the east end of the island, came running along the shore, about two hundred and fifty in number, as near as could be gueffed. Our army was but little indeed; and what was our greater mistortune, we had not arms sufficient for them: The account, as to the men, Sir, is as follows.

17 Spaniards. fil Muskets. 5 Englishmen. 5 Piftols. 3. Fowling-pieces. 1 Old Friday. 3. The three savages 2 Swords. 3 Old halberts. taken with the women, who prov-5 Muskets, or fowling-pieces, taken ed faithful serfrom the Sailors vants. 3 Other slaves living whom you reducwith the Spaniards. rd.

As to our flaves, we gave three of them halberts, and the other three long staves, with great iron spikes at the end of them, with hatchets by their sides; we also had hatchets, slicking in our girdles, besides the fire arms; nay two of the women, inspired with Amazonian fortitude, could not be dissuaded from sighting along with their dearest husbands, and if they died, to die with them, seeing their resolution, we gave them hatchets likewise; but what pleased them best, were the bows and arrows (which they dexterously knew how to use) that the Indians had left behind them after their memorable battle one against anther.

Over this army, which though little, was of great intrepidity, I was constituted chief general and commander; and knowing Will. Atkins, though exceeding wicked, yet a man of invincible courage, I gave him the power of commanding under me; he and six men, with their muskets loaded, with six or seven bullets apiece, were planted just behind a small thicket of bushes, as

an advanced guard, having orders to let the first pass by; and then, when he fired into the middle of them make a nimble retreat round part of the wood, and so come in the rear of the Spaniards, who were shaded by a thicket of trees; for though the favages came on with the fierceness of lions, yet they wanted the subtilty of foxes, being out of all manner of order, and straggling in heaps every way; and indeed when Will. Atkins, after fifty of the savages had passed by, had ordered three of his men to give fire, so great was their consternation, to see so many men killed and wounded, and hear fuch a dreadful noise, and yet, not know whence it came, that they were frightened to the highest degree; and when the second volley was given, they concluded no less but that their companions were flain by thunder and lightning from heaven. In this notion they would have continued, had Will. Atkins and his men retired as foon as they fired, according to order; or had the rest been near them, to pour in their shot continually, there might have been a complete victory obtained; but staying to load their pieces again, discovered the whole matter. they were perceived by some of the scattering savages at a distance, who let fly their arrows among them, wounded Atkins himself, and killed his fellow Englishman, and one of the Indians taken with the women. Our party did not fail to answer them, and in their retreat killed above 20 favages. Here I cannot but take notice of our poor dying flave, who though flopt from his retreat by a fatal arrow, yet with his staff and hatchet desperately

desperately and gallantly affailed the pursuers, and killed five of the favages, before his life fubmitted to a multiplicity of wounds. Nor is the cruelty or malice of the Indians to be less remarked, in breaking the arms, legs, and heads of the two dead bodies with their clubs and wooden fwords, after a most wretched manner. As Atkins retreated, our party advanced to interpose between him and the favages; but after three volleys, we were obliged to retreat also; for they were so numerous and desperate, that they came up to our very teeth, shot their arrows like a cloud, and they, and their wounded men, enraged with cruel pain, fought like madmen. They did not however think fit to follow us, but drawing themfelves up in a circle, they gave two triumphant shouts in token of victory, though they had the grief to fee feveral of their wounded men bleed to death before them.

After I had Sir, drawn up our little army together upon a rising ground, Atkins, wounded as he was, would have had us attack the whole body of the savages at once. I was extremely well pleased with the gallantry of the man, but upon consideration I replied, You perceive Signior Atkins how their wounded men fight; let them alone till morning, when they will be faint, siff, and sore, and then we shall have fewer to combat with. To which Will. Atkins smiling replied, That's very true Signior, and so shall I to; and that's the reason I would fight them now I am warm. We all answered, Signior Atkins, for your part, you have behaved very gallantly; and if you are not A a

able to approach the enemy in the morning, we will fight for you, till then we think it convenient

to wait; and fo we tarried.

By the brightness of the moon that night, we perceived the favages in great diforder about their dead and wounded men. This made us change our resolution, and resolve to fall upon them in the night, if we could give them one volley undiscovered. This we had a fair opportunity to do, by one of the two Englishmens leading us round, between the woods and the fea-fide westward, and turning short fouth, came privately to a place where the thickest of them were. Unheard and unperceived, eight of us fired among them, and did dreadful execution; and in half a minute after, eight more, of us let fly, killing and wounding abundance of them; and then dividing ourseves into three bodies, eight persons in each body, we marched from among the trees to the very teeth of the enemy, fending forth the greatest shouts and acclamations. The favages hearing a different noise from three quarters at once, stood in the utmost confusion; but coming in fight of us, let fly a volley of arrows, which wounded poor old Friday, yet happily it did not prove mortal. We did not however give them a fecond opportunity, but rushing in among them, we fired three feveral ways, and then fell to work with our fwords, staves, hatchets, and the buttend of our muskets, with such a fury not to be resisted; fo that, with the most dismal screaming and howling, ling, they had recourse to their seet, to save their lives by a speedy slight. Nor must we forget the valour of the two women; for they exposed themselves to the greatest dangers, killed many with their arrows, and valiantly destroyed several more with their hatchets.

In fighting these two battles, we were fo much tired, that we did not then trouble ourfelves to pursue them to their canoes, in which we thought they would prefently put to the ocean; but there happening a dreadful florm at fea, which continuing all that night, it not only prevented their voyage, but dashed several of their boats to pieces, against the beach, and drove the rest so high upon the shore, that it required infinite pains to get them off. After our men had taken some refreshment and a little repose, they resolved early in the morning to go towards the place of their landing, and fee whether they were gone off, or in what posture they remained. This necessarily led them to the place of battle, where feveral of the favages were expiring; a fight no way pleasing to generous minds, to delight in their mifery, though obliged to conquer them by the law of arms: but our own Indian flaves put them out of their pain, by dispatching them with their hatchets. At length coming in view of the remainder of their army, we found them leaning upon their knees, which were bended towards their mouth, and the head between the two hands. Hereupon, coming within musket-shot of them, I ordered

ordered two pieces to be fired without ball, in order to alarm them, that we might plainly know, whether they had the courage to venture another battle, or were utterly dispirited from such an attempt, that so we might accordingly manage them. And indeed the project took very well; for no sooner did the savages hear the first gun, and perceive the slash of the second, but they suddenly started upon their feet, in the greatest consternation; and when we approached towards them, they ran yowling and screaming away up the hill

into the country.

We could rather, at first have wished, that the weather had permitted them to have gone off to the sea; but when we considered, that their escape might occasion the approach of multitudes, to our utter ruin and desolation, we were very well pleased the contrary happened: and Will Atkins (who though wounded, would not part from us all this while) advised us not to let slip this advantage, but clapping between them and their boats, deprive them of the capacity of ever returning to plague the island; I know (said he) there is but one objection you can make, which is, that these creatures, living like beasts in the wood, may make excursions, rifle the plantations, and destroy the tame goats: but then consider, we had better to do with an hundred men, whom we can kill, or make flaves of at leifure, than with an hundred nations, whom it is impossible we should Save ourselves from, much less subdue. This advice and these arguments being approved of we set fire

fire to their boats, and though they were so wet that they would not burn entirely, yet we made them incapable for swimming in the seas. As soon as the Indians perceived what we were doing, many of them ran out of the woods, in sight of us, and kneeling down, piteously cried out, Oa, Oa, Waramakoa, intimating, I suppose, that if we would but spare their canoes, they would

never trouble us again.

But all their complaints, submissions, and intreaties, were in vain; for felf-prefervation obliging us to the contrary, we destroyed every one of them that had escaped the fury of the ocean. When the Indians perceived this, they raifed a lamentable cry, and ran into the woods where they continued ranging about, making the woods ring with their lamentation. Here we should have considered, that making these creatures thus desperate, we ought at the same time, to have fet a fufficient guard upon the plantations, for the favages in ranging about, found out the bower, destroyed the fences, trod the corn downunder their feet, and tore up the vines and grapes. It is true we were always able to fight these creatures, but as they were too swift for us, and very numerous, we durft not go out fingle, for fear of them; though that too was needlefs, they having no weapons, nor any materials to make them; and indeed their extremity appeared in a little time after.

Though the favages as already mentioned, had destroyed our bower and all our corn, grapes, &c.

Aa2

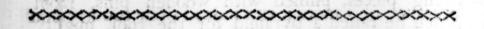
yet we had still left our stock of cattle in the valley by the cave, with some little corn that grew there, and the plantation of Will. Atkins and his companions, one of whom being killed by an arrow, they were now reduced to two; it is remarkable, that this was the fellow who cut the poor Indian with his hatchet, and had a defign to murder me and my countrymen the Spaniards. As our condition was fo low, we came to the refolation to drive the favages up to the farther part of the island, where no Indians landed, to kill as many of them as we could, till we had reduced their number; and then to give the remainder some corn to plant, and to teach them how to live by their daily labour. Accordingly we purfued them with our guns, at the hearing of which, they were so terrified, that they would fall to the ground. Every day we killed and wounded some of them, and many we found starved to death, so that our hearts began to relent at the fight of fuch miserable objects. At last with great difficulty taking one of them alive, and using him with kindness and tenderness, we brought him to old Friday, who talked to him and told him, how good we would be to them all, giving them corn and land, to plant and live in, and present nourishment, provided they would keep within such bounds as should be allotted them, and not do prejudice to others; Go then, (faid he) and inform your countrymen of this, which if they will not agree to, every one of them shall be slain.

The poor creatures, thoroughly humbled, be-

ing reduced to about thirty-seven, joyfully accept-ed the offer, and earnestly begged for food: hereupon we fent twelve Spaniards and two Englishmen, well armed, together with old Friday, and three Indian slaves, who marched to the place where they were. The slaves were loaded with a large quantity of bread, and rice cakes, with three live goats; the poor Indians being ordered to fit down on the fide of the hill, they are the victuals very thankfully, and have proved faithful to the last, never trespassing beyond their bounds, where at this day they quietly remain, and where we now and then visit them. They are confined to a neck of land about a mile and a half broad. and three or four in length, on the fouth-east corner of the island, the sea being before, and lofty mountains behind them, free from the appearance of canoes; and indeed their countrymen have never made any inquiry after them. We gave them twelve hatchets, and three or four knives; have taught them to build huts, make wooden spades, plant corn, make bread, breed tame goats, and milk them, as likewife to make wicker-work, in which I must ingenuously confess, they infinitely outdo us, having made themfelves several pretty necessaries and fancies, as balkets, fieves, bird-cages, and cupboards, as also stools, beds, and couches, no less useful than delightful; and now they live the most innocent and inoffensive creatures that ever were subdued in the world, wanting nothing but wives to make them a nation. Thus

Thus kind Sir, have I given you, according to my ability, an impartial account of the various transactions that have happened in the island since your departure, to this day: and we have great reason to acknowledge the kind providence of heaven in our merciful deliverance. When you inspect your little kingdom, you will find in it some little improvement, your slocks increased, and your subjects augmented; so that from a desolate island, as this was before your wonderful deliverance upon it, here is a visible prospect of its becoming a populous and well governed little kingdom to your immortal same and glory.

The end of the Spanish governor's relation.



The continuation of the life of Robinson Crusoe, both of those passages that happened during the time of his continuance on the island, and after his departure, till he arrived again in his native country.

THERE is no doubt to suppose, but that the precedent relation of my faithful Spaniard was very agreeable, and no less surprising to me to the young priest, and to all who heard it; nor were these people less pleased with those necessary utensils that I brought them, such as the knives, scissars,

fciffars, spades, shovels, and pick-axes, with which they now adorn their habitations. So much had they addicted themselves to wicker-work prompted by the ingenuity of the Indians, who affisted them that when I viewed the Englishmen's colonies, they feemed at a distance as though they had lived like bees in a hive: for Will. Atkins, who was now become a very industrious and sober man, had made himself a tent of basket-work round the outside: the walls were worked in as a basket, in pannels or strong squares of thirty-two in number, standing about seven foot high; in the middle was another, not above twenty two paces round, but much stronger built, being of an octogonal form, and in the eight corners stood eight strong posts round the top of which he laid strong pieces, pinned with wooden pins, from which he raised a pyramid for the roof, mighty pretty I assure you, and joined very well toge-ther with iron spikes, which he made himself; for he had made him a forge, with a pair of wooden bellows and charcoal for his work, forming an anvil out of one of the iron crows, to work upon, and in this manner would he make himself hooks, staples, spikes, bolts, and hinges. After he had pitched the roof of his innermost tent, he made it so firm between the rafters with basket-work, thatching that over again with ricestraw, and over that a large leaf of a tree, that his house was as dry as if it had been tiled or flated. The outer circuit was covered as a lean to, quite round this inner apartment, laying long rafters

rafters from the thirty-two angles, to the topposts of the inner house, about twenty foot distant; fo that there was a space like a walk betwixt the outer and inner wall near twenty foot in breadth. The inner place he partitioned off with the fame wicker-work, dividing it into fix neat apartments, every one of which, had a door first into the entry of the main tent, and another into the space and walk that was round it, not only convenient for retreat, but for family necesfaries. Within the door of the outer circle, there was a passage, directly to the door of the inner house; on either side was a wicker partition, and a door, by which you go first into a large room twenty-two foot wide, and about thirty long, and through that into another of a smaller length; fo that in the outward circle were ten handsome rooms, fix of which were only to be come at through the apartments of the inner tent, ferving as retiring rooms to the respective chambers of the inner circle, and four large warehouses, which went in through one another, two on either chand of the passage that led through the outward door to the inner tent. In short, nothing could be built more ingeniously, kept more neat, or have better conveniencies; and here lived the three families, Will. Atkins, his companion, their wives and children, and the widow of the deceased. As to religion, the men feldom taught their wives the knowledge of God, any more than the failors custom of swearing by his name. The greatest improvement their wives had, was, they taught them

them to speak English, so as to be understood. None of their children were then above six years old: they were all fruitful enough; and I think, the cook's mate's wife was big of her sixth child.

When I enquired of the Spaniards about their circumstances while among the Savages, they told me that they abandoned themselves to despair, reckoning themselves a poor and miserable people, that had no means put into their hands, and consequently must soon be starved to death. They owned however, that they were in the wrong to think so, and for refusing the assistance that reason offered for their support, as well as souther deliverance, confessing that grief was a most insignificant passion, as it looked upon things as without remedy, and having no hope of good things to come; all which verified this noted proverb,

In trouble to be troubled.

Is to have your trouble doubled.

Nor did his remarks end here; for making observations upon my improvements, and on my condition at first, infinitely worse than theirs, he told me, that Englishmen had, in their distress, greater presence of mind than those of any other country that he had met with; and that they and the Portuguese were the wrost men in the world to sturggle under missortune. When they landed among the savages, they found but little provision, except they would turn cannibals, there being

being but a few roots and herbs, with little fubstance in them, and of which the natives gave them but very sparingly. Many were the ways they took to civilize and teach the favages, but in vain; for they would not own them to be their instructors, whose lives were owing to their bounty. Their extremities were very great, many days being entirely without food, the favages there being more indolent, and less devouring than those who had better supplies. When they went out to battle, they were obliged to affift these poeple, in one of which my faithful Spaniard being taken, had like to have been devoured. They had loft their ammunition, which rendered their fire arms useless; nor could they use the bows and arrows that were given them fo that while the armies were at a distance, they had no chance, but when close, then they could be of service with halberts and sharpened sticks put into the muzzles of their muskets. They made themselves targets of wood, covered with the skins of wild beasts; and when one happened to be knocked down, the rest of the company fought over him, till he recovered: and then standing close in a line, they would make their way through a thousand savages. At the return of their friend, who they thought had been intombed in the bowels of their enemies, their joy was inconceivable. Nor were they less surprised at the fight of the loaves of bread I had fent them, things that they had not seen for several years, at the same time crossing and bleffing it, as though it was manna fent from heaven: but when they knew the errand, and perceived the boat which was to carry them to the person and place from whence such relief came, this struck them with such a surprise of joy, as made some of them faint away, and others burst out into tears.

This was the fummary account that I had from them. I shall now inform the reader what I next did for them, and in what condition I left them. As we were all of opinion that the favages would fcarce trouble them any more, fo we had no apprehensions on that score. I told them I was come purely to establish, and not remove them; and upon that occasion, had not only brought them necessaries for convenience and defence, but also artificers and other persons, both for their necesfary employments, and to add to their number. They were all together when I thus talked to them; and before I delivered to them the stores I had brought, I asked them one by one, if they had entirely forgot their first animosities, would engage in the strictest friendship, and shake hands with one another? On this Will. Atkins, with abundance of good humour faid, they had had afflictions enough to make them all fober, and enemies enough to make them all friends: as for himself, he would live and die among them owning that what the Spaniards had done to him, his own mad humour had made necessary for them to do. Nor had the Spaniards occasion to justify their proceeding to me; but they told me, that fince Rh Will

Will. Atkins had behaved himself so valiantly in fight, and at other times shewed such a regard to the common interest of them all, they had not only forgotton all that was past, but thought he ought as much to be trusted with arms and necessaries as any of them, which they testified by making him next in command to the governor; and they most heartily embraced the occasion of giving me this solemn assurance, that they would never seperate

their interest again as long as they lived.

After these declarations of friendship, we appointed all of us to dine together the next day: upon this I caused the ship's cook and his mate to come on shore for that purpose, to assist in drefling our dinner. We brought from the ship fix pieces of beef, and four of pork, together with our punch-bowl, and materials to fill it; and in particular, I gave them ten bottles of French clarer, and ten of English beer, which was very reast five whole kids, which being roasted, three of them were fent as fresh meat to the sailors on board, and the other two we ate ourfelves. After our merry and innocent feast was over, I began to destribute my cargo among them. First I gave them linen sufficient to make every one of them four hirts, and at the Spaniard's request made them up fix. The thin English stuffs I allotted to make every one a light coat like a frock agreeable to the climate, and left them such a quantity, as to make more upon their decay; as also pumps, shoes, hats, and stockings. It is not

v

t

S

n

S

e

)-

C

n

P

T

d

h

y

ır

e

n

ft

e st

k

2

28

ot

to

to be expressed the pleasing satisfaction which sat upon the countenances of these poor men, when they perceived what care I took of them, as if I had been a common father to them all; and they all engaged never to leave the island, till I gave my consent for their departure. I then presented to them the people I brought, to wit, the taylor, fmith, and the two carpenters; but my Jack of all trades was the most acceptable prefent I could make them. My taylor fell immediately to work, and made every one of them a shirt, after which he learned the women how to few and stitch, thereby to become the more helpful to their hufbands. Neither were the carpenters less useful taking in pieces their clumfy things, instead of which they made convenient and handsome tables, stools, bedsteads, cupboards, lockers and shelves. But when I carried them to fee Will. Atkins's basket house, they owned they never saw such natural ingenuity before: I am fure faid one of the carpenters, the man who built this has no need of us; you need Sir, do nothing but give him

I divided the tools among them in this manner; to every man I gave a digging-spade, a shovel and a rake, as having no harrows or ploughs; and to every separate place a pick-axe, a crow, a broad axe, and a saw, with a store for a general supply, should any be broken or worn out. I lest them also nails, staples, hinges, hammers, chissels, knives, scissars, and all sorts of tools and iron work; and for the use of the smith, gave them three ton of B b 2 unwrought

unwrought iron for a supply: and as to arms and ammunition, I stored them even to profusion or at least to equip a sufficient little army against

all opposers whatsoever.

The young man (whose mother was unfortunately starved to death) together with the maid, a pious and well educated young woman, feeing things so well ordered on shore (for I made them accompany me) and confidering they had no occasion to go so far a voyage, as to the East-Indies, they both desired of me, that I would leave them there, and enter them among my subjects. This I readily agreed to, ordering them a plat of ground on which were three little houses erected, environed with basket-work, pallisadoed like Atkins's, and adjoining to his plantation. So contrived were their tens, that each of them had a room apart to lodge in, while the middle tent was not only their storehouse, but their place for eating and drinking. At this time the two Englishmen removed their habitation to their former place; so that now the island was divided into three colonies; first, Those I have just now mentioned; secondly, That of Will. Atkins, where there where four families of Englishmen, with their wives and children, the widow and her children: the young man, and the maid, who, by the way, we made a wife of before our departure; three favages, who were flaves; the tailor, fmith, (who ferved also as a gunsmith), and my other celebrated person called Jack of all trades. Thridly, My chief colony, which consisted of the Spaniards Spaniards, with old Friday, who still remained at my old habitation, which was my capital city; and surely never was there such a metropolis, it now being hid in so obscure a grove, that a thousand men might have ranged the island a month, and looked purposely for it, without being able to find it, though the Spaniards had enlarged its boundaries, both without and within,

in a most surprising manner.

But now I think it high time to speak of the young French priest of the order of St. Benedict, whose judicious and pious discourses, upon sundry occasions, merit an extraordinary observation; nor can his being a French Papist priest, I presume give offence to any of my readers, when they have this assurance from me, that he was a person of the most courteous disposition, extensive charity, and exalted piety. His arguments were always agreebleable to reason, and his conversation the most acceptable of any person that I had ever yet met with in my life.

Sir, faid he to me one day, since under God (at the same time crossing his breast) you have not only saved my life, but by permitting me to go this voyage, have granted me this happiness of free conversation, I think it my duty, as my profession or bliges me to save what souls I can, by bringing them to the knowledge of some Catholic doctrine, necessary to salvation, and since those people are under your immediate government, in gratitude, justice, and desency for what you have done for me, I shall offer no farther points in religion, than what shall Bb 2

merit your approbation. Being pleased with the modesty of his carriage, I told him he should not be the worse used for being of a different perfuation, if upon that very account, we did not differ in points of faith, not decent in a part of the country where the poor Indians ought to be instructed in the knowledge of the true God, and his Son Jesus Christ. To this he replied, that conversation might easily be seperated from disputes; that he would discourse with me rather as a gentleman, than a religious; but that if we did enter upon religious arguments, upon my defiring the same, I would give him liberty to defend his own principles. He farther added, that he would do all that became him in his office, as a priest as well as a Christian, to procure the happiness of all that was in the ship; that though he could not pray with, he would pray for us, on all occasions: and then he told me several extraordinary events of his life, within a few years past, but particularly in his last, which was the most remarkable; that in this voyage he had the misfortune to be five times shipped and unshipped; his first design was to have gone to Martinico, for which taking ship at St. Malo, he was forced into Lithon by bad weather, the vessel running aground in the mouth of the Tagus: that from thence he went on board a Portuguese ship, bound to the Maderas, whose master being an indifferent mariner, and out of his reckoning, they were drove to Fial, where felling their commodity, which was corn, they resolved to take in their loading loading at the isle of May, and to sail to Newfoundland; at the banks of which, meeting a French ship bound to Quebec, in the river of Canada, and from thence to Martinico; in this ship he embarked, the master of which dying at Quebec, that voyage was suspended; and lastly, shipping himself for France, this last ship was dedestroyed by fire, as before has been related.

At this time we talked no further; but another morning he comes to me, just as I was going to visit the Englishmens colony, and tells me, that as he knew the prosperity of the island was my principal defire, he had fomething to communicate agreeable to my defign, by which perhaps he might put it, more than he yet thought it was in the way of the benedicton of Heaven. How Sir, said I, in a surprise, are we not yet in the way of God's bleffing, after all these signal providences and deliverances, of which you have had fuch an ample relation? He replied, I hope Sir, you are in the way, and that your good delign will prosper; but still there are some among you that are not equally right in their actions; and remember, I befeech you Sir, than Achan, by his crime, removed God's bleffing from the camp of the children of Israel; that though fix and thirty were entirely innocent, yet they became the objects of divine vengeance, and bore the weight of the punishment accordingly.

So fensibly was I touched with this discourse, and so satisfied with that ardent piety that inflamed his soul, that I desired him to accompany me

ambag

ry glad of, by reason there were the subjects of what he designed to discourse with me about; and while we walked on together he began in the

following manner.

Sir, faid he, I must confess it is a great unhappiness that we disagree in several doctrinal articles of religion; but furely both of us acknow-knowledge this, that there is a God, who having given us fome flated rules, for our fervice and obedience, we ought not willingly and knowingly to offend him, either by neglecting what he has commanded, or by doing what he has forbidden. This truth every Christian owns, that whenever any one presumptuously sins against God's command, the Almighty then withdraws his bleffing from him: every good man therefore ought certainly to prevent such neglect of or sin against God and his commands. I thanked the young priest for expressing to great a concern for us, and defired him to explain the particulars of what he had observed, that according to the parable of Achan, I might remove the accurred thing from among us. Why then Sir, said he, in the first place, you have four Englishmen who have taken favage women to their wives, by whom they have feveral children, though none of them are legally married, as the law of God and man requires; They I say Sir, are no less than adulterers, and as they still live in adultery, are liable to the curfe of God. I know Sir, you may object the want of a priest or clergyman of any kind; as alfo

also, pen, ink, and paper, to write down a contract of marriage, and have it figned between them. But neither this, nor what the Spanish governor has told you of their chusing by consent, can be reckoned a marriage, nor any more than an agreement to keep them from quarrelling among themselves; for, Sir, the essence or sacrament of matrimony (so he called it) not only confists in mutual confent, but in the legal obligation which compels them to own and acknowledge one another, to abstain from other persons, the men to provide for their wives and children, and the women to the same or like condition, mutatis mutandis, on their side: whereas, Sir, these men, upon their own pleasure, on any occasion, may forsake those women, and marry others, and by disowning their children, fuffer them utterly to perish. Now, Sir, added he, can God be honoured in such an unlawful liberty as this; how can a bleffing fucceed the best endeavours. if men are allowed to live in so licentious a way? I was indeed struck with the thing myself, and thought that they were much to blame that no formal contract had been made, though it had been but breaking a flick between them, to engage them to live as man and wife, never to separate; but love, cherish and comfort one another all their lives; yet, Sir, faid I, when they took these women, I was not here, and if it is adultery, it is past my remedy, and I cannot help it, True, Sir, answered the young priest, you cannot be charged with that part of the crime which was done in your absence: but I be feech,

beseech you, don't flatter yourself, that you are under no obligation now to put a period to it; which if you neglect to do, the guilt will be entirely on you alone, since it is certainly in no body's power but yours, to alter their condition. I must confess, I was fo dull, that I thought he meant I should part them, and knowing that this would put the whole island in confusion, I told him I could not confent to it upon any account whatfoever. Sir, faid he, in a great surprise, I do not mean that you should separate, but marry them, by a written contract, figned by both man and woman, and by all the witnesses present, which all the European laws decree to be of sufficient efficacy. Amazed with such true piety and fincerity, and confidering the validity of a written contract, I acknowledged all that he faid to be very just and kind; and that I would discourse with the men about it: neither could I fee what reason they could have not to let him marry them, whose authority in that affair is owned to be as authentic, as if they were married by any of our clergymen in England. 2002 and

The next complaint he had to make to me, was this, that though these English subjects of mine had lived with these women seven years, and though they were of good understanding, and capable of instruction, having learned not only to speak, but to read English; yet all this while they had never taught them any thing of the Christian religion, or the knowledge of God, much less in what manner he ought to be served. And is not this an unaccountable neglect? said he,

warmly,

wartaly. Depend upon it, God almighty will call them to account for such contempt. And though I am not of your religion, yet I should be glad to see these people released from the devil's power, and be saved by the principles of the Christian religion, the knowledge of God, of a Redeemer, the resurrection, and of a future state. But as it is not yet too late, if you please to give me leave to instruct them, I doubt not but I shall supply this great defect, by bringing them into the great circle of Christianity, even while you continue in the island.

I could hold no longer, but embracing him, told him, with a thousand thanks, I would grant whatever he requested, and desired him to proceed in the third article, which he did in the following

manner.

Sir, said he, it should be a maxim among all Christians, that Christian knowledge ought to be propagated by all possible means, and on all occafrons. Upon this account our church sends missionaries into Persia, India, and China, men who are willing to die for the sake of God and the Christian saith, in order to bring poor insidels into the way of salvation. Now, Sir, as here is an opportunity to convert seven and thirty poor salvages, I wonder how you can pass by such an occasion of doing good, which is really worth the expense of a man's whole life.

I must confess I was so confounded at this discourse, that I could not tell how to answer him. Sir, said he, seeing me in disorder, I shall be very forry

forry if I have given you offence. No, Sir, faid I, I am rather confounded; and you know my circumstances, that being bound to the East Indies in a merchant-ship, I cannot wrong the owners so much, as to detain the ship here, the men lying at victuals and wages on their account. If I flay above twelve days, I must pay 31. Sterling per diem demurrage nor must the ship stay above eight days more; fo that I am unable to engage in this work, unless I would leave the ship, and be reduced to my former condition. The priest, though he owned this was hard upon me, yet laid it to my conscience, whether the bleffing of saving seven and thirty fouls was not worth venturing all that I had in the world? Sir, faid I, it is very true: but as you are an ecclesiastic, it naturally falls into your profession: why therefore don't you rather offer to undertake it yourfelf, than press me to it? Upon this he turned about, making a very low bow, I most humbly thank God and you, Sir, said he, for so bleffed a call; and most willingly undertake so glorious an office, which will sufficiently compensate all the hazards and difficulties I have gone through in a long and uncomfortable voyage.

While he was thus speaking, I could discover a rapture in his face, by his colour going and coming; at the same time his eyes sparkled like fire, with all the signs of the most zealous transports. And when I asked whether he was in earnest; Sir, said he, it was to preach to the Indians I consented to come along with you; these insidels, even in this little island, are infinitely of

more worth than my poor life: if so that I should prove the happy instrument of faving these poor creatures fouls, I care not if I never fee my native country again. One thing I only beg of you more, is, that you would leave Friday with me, to be my interpreter without whose assistance neither of us will understand each other.

This request very sensibly troubled me, first; upon Friday's being bred a Protestant, and iecondly, for the affection I bore to him for his fidelity: but immediately the remembrance of Friday's father coming into my head, I recommended him to him, as having learned Spanish, which the priest also understood; and so was thoroughly fatisfied with him.

When we came to the Englishmen, after I had told them what necessary things I had done for them, I talked to them of the feandalous life they led, told them what notice the clergyman had taken of it, and asked them if they were married men or batchelors? They answered, two of them were widowers, and the other three fingle men. But, faid I, with what confeiences can you call these your wives, by whom ye have so many children, and yet are not lawfully married? They all faid, that they took them before the governor as fuch, having nobody elfe to marry them, which they thought as legal, as if they had had a parfon. No doubt, faid I, but in the eye of God wou are fo; but unless I am affured of your honest intent, never to defert these poor creatures, I can do nothing more for you, neither can you expect God's bleffing

bleffing while you live in fuch an open courfe of adultery. Hereupon Will. Atkins, who spoke for the rest, told me, That they believed their wives the most innocent and virtuous creatures in the world: that they would never forfake them while they had breath; and that if there was a clergyman in the ship, they would be married to them with all their heart. I told you before, faid I, that I have a minister with me, who shall marry you to-morrow morning, if you are willing; fo I would have you consult to-night, with the rest, about it. I told him, the clergyman was a Frenchman, and knew not a word of English, but that I would act as a clerk between them. indeed this business met with such speedy success, that they all told me, in a few minutes after, that they were ready to be formally married as foon as I pleased; with which informing the priest, he was exceedingly rejoiced.

Nothing now remained, but that the women should be made sensible of the meaning of the thing; with which being well satisfied, they with their husbands attended at my apartment the next morning: there was my priest, habited in a black vest, something like a cassock, with a sash round it, much resembling a minister, and I was his interpreter. But the seriousness of his behaviour, and the scruples he made of marrying the women who were not baptized, gave them an exceeding reverence for his person: nor indeed would he marry them at all, till he obtained my liberty to discourse both with the men

st

Piju

men and women, and then he told them, Thar, in the fight of all indifferent, men, and in the fense of the laws of society, they had lived in cpen adultery, which nothing now, but their confent to marry, or final separation, could put an end to; and even here was a difficulty with refpect to the laws of Christian matrimony, in marrying a professed Christan to a heathen idolater, unbaptized; but yet there was time enough to make them profess the name of Christ, without which nothing could be done: that besides, hebelieved themselves very indifferent Christians; and consequently had not discoursed with their wives upon that subject; and that unless they promifed him to do fo. he could not marry them, as being expressly forbidden by the laws of God.

t

e

n

a

d

is

1-

e

1:

e

ne

n

All this they heard attentively, and owned readily: But, Lord, Sir! faid Will. Atkins to me, bow should we teach them religion, who know nothing of it ourselves? How can we talk to our wives of Cod, Jesus Christ, Heaven and Hell? why, they would only laugh at us, who never yet have practised religion, but on the contrary all manner of wickedness. Will. Atkins, said I, cannot you tell your wife, she is in the wrong, and that her gods are idols, which can neither hear, speak, nor understand: but that our God, who has made, can destroy all things; that he rewards the good, and punishes the wicked; and at last will bring us to judgment: cannot you tell her these things? That's true, faid Atkins, but then she'll tell me, it is utterly false, since I am not punished and fent to the devil, who have been such a wicked

Cc2

creature.

creature. These words I interpreted to the priest : O! said he, tell him, his repentance will make him a very good minister to his spouse, and qualify him to preach on the mercy and long-fuffering of a mercitul Being, who defires not the death of a finner, and even defers damnation to the last judgment; this will lead him to the doctrine of it, and will make him an excellent preacher to his wife. I repeated this to Atkins, who being more than ordinarily affected with it, replied, I know all this, Sir, and a great deal more; but how can I have the impudence to talk thus my wife; when my confcience witnesses against me? ALAS; faid he, (with tears in his eyes, and giving a great figh), as for repenting, that is for ever past me. Past you; Atkins, said I, what do you mean? you know well enough, faid he, what I

When I told the priest what he said, the poor affectionate man could not refrain from weeping: but recovering himself, Pray, Sir, said he ask him, if he is contented that it is too late; or is he concerned, and wishes it were not so? This qualition I put fairly to Atkins, who replied in a passion, How can I be easy in a state which I know must terminate in my ruin? for I really believe, some time or other, I shall cut my throat, to put a period both to my life and to the terrors of my conscience.

mean? I mean it is too late.

At this the clergyman shook his head. Sir, faid he, pray tell him it is not too late; Christ will give him repentance, if he has recourse to

the merit of his passion. Does he think he is beyond the power of divine mercy? there may indeed be a time when provoked mercy will no longer strive, but never too late for men to repent in this world. I told Atkins every word the priest had faid, who then parted from us to talk to his wife, while we discoursed with the rest. But those were very stupid in religious matters, yet all of them promised to do their endeavours to make their wives turn Christians; and upon which promifes the priest married the three couple. But as Atkins was the only fincere convert, and of more fense than the rest, my clergyman was earnestly inquiring after him; Sir, faid he, let us walk out of this labyrnith, and I dare fay we shall find this poor man preaching to his wife already. And indeed we found it true; for coming to the edge of the wood, we perceived Atkins and his favage wife fitting under the shade of a bush, in very earnest discourse; he pointed to the sun, to the quarters of the earth, to himfelf, to her, the wood, and the trees. Immediately we could perceive him start upon his feet, fall down upon his knees, and lift up both his hands; at which the tears ran down my clergyman's cheeks; but our great misfortune was, we could not hear one word that passed between them. Another time he would embrace her, wiping the tears from her eyes, kiffing her with the greatest transports, and both kneel down for some minutes together. Such raptures of joy did this occasion in my young priest, that he could scarcely contain himself: And a little after this we observed by her motion,

ing them on her breast, that she was mightily affected with his discourse, and so they withdrew

from our fight,

When we came back, we found them both waiting to be called in; upon which we agreed to exaimne him alone, and so I began thus to discourse him. Prithee, Will Atkins, said I, what education had you? What was your father.

W. A. A better man-than ever I shall be: he was, Sir, a clergyman, who gave me good instruction, or correction, which I despised like a brute as I was, and murdered my poor fa-

ther.

Pr. Ha! a murderer!

Here the priest started and looked pale, as thinking be had really killed his father.

R. C. What did you kill him with your hands? W. A. No, Sir, I cut not his throat, but broke his heart, by the most unnatural return of disobe-

dience to the tenderest and best of fathers.

R. C. Well, I pray God grant you repentance; I did not ask you to extort a confession; but I asked you, because I see you have more knowledge of what is good than your companions.

W. A. O, Sir, whenever I look back upon my past life, conscience upbraids me with my father; the fins against our parents make the deepest wounds, and their weight lies the heaviest upon the mind.

R. C. You talk, Will, too feelingly and fen-

fibly for me; I am not able to bear it.

W. A.

W. A. You bear it, Sir, you know nothing of it.

R. C. But yes, Atkins, I do; and every shore, valley, and tree in this island, witness the anguish of my foul for my undutifulness to my kind father, whom I have murdered likewife; yet my repentance falls infinitely short of yours. But, Will, how comes the fense of this matter to touch you just now?

W. A. Sir, the work you have fet me about has occasioned it; for talking to my wife about God and religion, she has preached me such a fermon, that I shall retain it in lasting remembrance.

R. C. No, no, it is your own moving pious arguments to her, has made conscience fling them back upon you. But pray, Atkins, inform us what passed between you and your wife, and in what manner did you begin?

W. A, I talked to her of the laws of marriage, the reason of such compacts, whereby order and justice is maintained; without which men would run from their wives and children, to the diffolution of families or inheritances.

soil office devices which od con imai evid on moder E

the still our real expendition has

R. C. Well, and what did she say to all this?

W. A. Sir, we began our discourse in the following manner, which I shall exactly repeat according to my mean capacity, if you think it worth your while to honour it with your attention,

end but viewer entropy and fen-

A .W ... HISTORY TO THE TRANSPORT OF

The Dialogue between Will. Atkins, and his wife in the wood.

Wife. YOU tell me marriage God appoint; have you God in your country?

W. A. Yes, child, God is in every nation.

Wife. No, great old Benamuckee God is in my

country, not yours.

W. A. My dear, God is in heaven, which he made; he also made the earth, the sea, and all that is therein.

Wife. Why you not rell me much long ago?

W. A. My dear, I have been a wicked wretch, having a long time lived without the knowledge of God in the world.

Wife. What, not know great God in own nation? No do good ting? No fay O to him? that's strange!

W. A. But, my dear, many live as if there was

no God in heaven for all that.

Wife. Why God fuffer this? why makee not live well?

W. A. It is our own faults, child.

Wife. But if he much great, can makee kill, why no makee kill when no ferve him? No be good mans, no cry O to him?

W. A. That's true, my dear, he may strike us

dead, but his abundant mercy spareth us.

Wife.

Wife. Did not you tell God tankee for that?

W. A. No, I have neither thanked him for his mercy, nor feared him for his power.

Wife. Then me not believe your God be good,

nor makee kill, when you makee him angry.

W. A. Alas! must my wicked life hinder you

from believing in him?

Wife. How can me tink your God live there? (pointing to heaven) Sure he no ken what you do here.

W. A. Yes, yes, my dear, he hears us speak sees what we do, and knows what we even think.

Wife. Where then makee power strong, when

he hears you curse, swear the great damn?

W. A. My dear, this shews he is indeed a God, and not a man, who has such tender mercy.

Wife. Mercy, what you call mercy?

W. A. He pities and spares us; as he is our great creator, so also he is our tender father.

Wife, So God never angry, never kill wicked,

then he no good, no great mighty.

W. A. O my dear, don't say so, he is both; and many times he shews terrible examples of his judgment and vengeance.

Wife. Then you makee be bargain with him; you do bad thing, he no hurt you, he hurt other

mans.

W. A. No indeed, my fins are all presumptions upon his goodness.

Wife. Well, and yet no makee you dead; and

you give him no tankee neither?

W. A. It is true, I am an ungrateful, unthankful dog, that I am.

Wife.

Wife. Why, you say, he makee you, why makee you no much better then?

W. A. It is I alone that have deformed myself,

and abused his goodness.

Wife. Pray makee God know me, me no makee

him angry, no do bad thing.

W. A. You mean, my dear, that you defire I would teach you to know God: alass! poor dear creature; he must teach thee, and not I. But I'll pray earnestly to him to direct thee, and to forgive me, a miserable sinner. Hereupon he went a little distance. and kneeling down, prayed earnestly to God to enlighten her mind, and to pardon her sins; when this was done, they continued their discourse thus.

Wife. What you put down knee for? For

what hold up hand? Who you speak to?

W. A. My dear, I bowed in token of submission to him that made me, and prayed that he would open your eyes and understanding.

Wife. And can he do that too? And will he

hear what you fay?

W. A. Yes, my dear, he bids us pray, and has given us promife that he will hear us.

Wife. When did he bid you pray? What, do

you hear him fpeak?

W. A. No, my dear, but God has spoken formerly to good men from heaven: and by divine revelation they have written all his laws down in a book.

Wife. O where dat good book?

W. A. I have it not now by me; but one time

or other I shall get it for you to read. Then he embraced her with great affection.

Wife. Pray tell a me did God teachee them

write that book?

W. A. Yes, and by that rule we know him to be God.

Wife, What way, what rule you know him?

W. A. Because he teaches what is good, just, and holy; and forbids all wicked and abominable

actions that incur his displeasure.

Wife. O me fain understand that, and if he do all things you say he do, surely he hear me say O to him; he makee me good if I wish to be good; he no kill me if I love him; me tink, believe him great God; me say O to him, along with you, my dear.

Here the poor man fell upon his knees, and made her kneel down by him, praying with the greatest fervency that God would instruct her by his Holy Spirit; and that God by his providence would send them a Bible for both their instructions. And such was the early piety of this new convert, that she made him promise, never to for-sake God any more, lest, being made dead, as she called it, she should not only want her instructor, but himself be miserable in a long eternity.

Such a surprising account as this was, proved very affecting to us both, but particularly to the young clergyman, who was mightily concerned he could not talk to her himself. Sir, said he, there is something more to be done to this woman than to marry her: I mean, that she ought to be baptized. To this I presently agreed: Pray, said he again:

again: ask her hulband, whether he has ever talked to her of Jesus Christ, the salvation of sinners, the nature of faith and redemption in and by him, of the Holy Spirit, the refurrection, last judgment, and a future state: but the poor fellow melted into tears at this question, saying, that he had faid fomething to her of these things, but his inability to talk of them, made him afraid left her knowledge of them, should rather make her contemn religion, than be benefited by it: but that if I would discourse with her, it would be very evident, my labour would not be in vain. Accordingly I called her in, and placing myfelf as interpreter between the religious priest and the woman, Intreated him to go on: but furely never was fuch a fermon preached by any clergyman in thefe latter days, with fo much zeal, knowledge, and fincerity; in thort, he brought the woman to embrace the knowledge of Christ, and of redemption by him, with fo surprifing a degree of understanding, that she made it her own request to be baptized.

He then performed his office in the factament of baptilin, first by saying some words over to himfelf in Latin, and then asking me to give her a name, as being her godfather, and pouring a whole dish full of water upon the woman's head, he said, MARY, I baptize thee in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; so that none could know of what religion he was. After this he pronounced the benediction in Latin. Thus the woman being made a Christian, he mirried her to Will. Atkins, which being stoished, he affectionately

affectionately exhorted him to lead a ho'y life for the future; that fince the Almighty, by the convictions of his conscience, had honoured him to be the instrument of his wife's conversion, he should not dishonour the grace of God, that while the savage was converted, the instrument should be cast away. Thus ended a ceremony, to me the most pleasant and agreeable I ever passed in my life.

The affairs of the island being settled, I was preparing to go on board, when the young man (whose mother was starved) came to me, saying, that as he understood I had a clergyman with me, who had married the Englishmen with savages, he had a match to make between two Christians, which he defired might be finished before I departed. Thinking that it was he himself that had courted his mother's maid, I perfuaded him not to do any thing rashly upon the account of his solitary circumstances; that the maid was an unequal match for him both in respect to substance and years; and that it was very probable he would live to return to his own country, where he might have a far better choice. At these words, smiling, he interrupted me, thanking me for my good advice; that as he had nothing to beg of me, but a small settlement, with a servant or two, or some necessaries; so he hoped I would not be unmindful of him when I returned to England, but give his letters to his friends; and that when he was redeemed, the plantation and all its improvements, however valuable, should be returned to me again. But as for the marriage he proposed, that it was nor

not for himself, but that it was between my Jack of all trades, and the maid Susan.

I was indeed agreeably furprifed at the mentioning this match, which feemed to be very fuitable, the one being a very ingenious fellow, and the other an excellent, dexterous, and fensible housewife, fit to be a governess of the whole island: so we married them the fame day; and as I was her father, and gave her away, fo I gave her a handsome portion, appointing her and her husband a convenient large space of ground for their planta-tion. The sharing out of the land I left to Will. Atkins, who really divided it very justly, to every person's satisfaction: they only desired one general writing under my hand for the whole, which I caused to be drawn up, signed and sealed to them, fetting out their bounds, and giving them a right to the whole possession of their respective plantations, with their improvements, to them and their heirs, referving all the rest of the island as my own property, and a certain rent for every particular plantation after eleven years. As to their laws and government, I exhorted them to love one another: and as the Indians who lived in a nook by themselves, I allotted three or four of them plantations, and the rest willingly chose to become ser-vants to the other families. by which means they were employed in useful labour, and fared much better than they did before. Besides, the Savages being thus mixed with the Christians, the work of their conversion might be fet on foot by the latter, in the clergyman's absence, to our equal satisfaction, The young priest, however was a little anxious,

anxious, lest the Christians should not be willing to do their parts in instructing those poor Indians; I therefore too him, we should call them all together; that he should speak to the Spaniards who were Papists, and I to the English who were Protestants, and make them promise that they would never make any distinction in religion, but teach the general true knowledge of God and his Son Jesus Christ, in order to convert the poor savages: and this indeed they all promised us ac-

cordingly.

e

When I came to Will. Atkins's house, I found his baptized wife, and the young woman newly married to my Jack of all trades, were become great intimates, and discoursing of religion toge-O Sir, fays Will. Atkins, when God has sinners to reconcile to himself, he never wants an instructor: I knew I was unworthy for so good a work, and therefore this young woman has been fent hither as it were from heaven, who is sufficient to convert a whole island of favages. The young woman blushed, and was going to rife; but I defired her to fit still, and hoped that God would bless her in fo good a work: and then pulling out a Bible, (which I brought on purpose in my pocker for him), Here, Atkins, faid I, here is an affiltant that perhaps you had not before. So confounded was the poor man, that it was some time before he could speak; at last turning to his wife, My dear, faid he, did I not tell you that God could hear what we faid? Here's the book I prayed for, when you and I kneeled down under the bush: God then heard us, and now has fent it. The woman was D d 2 furprised,

furprised, and thought really God had sent that individual book from heaven; but I turned to the young woman, and desired her to explain to the new convert, that God may properly be said to answer our petitions, when in the course of his providence such particular things come to pass as we petioned for. This the young woman did effectually; but surely Will. Atkins's joy cannot be expressed; no man being more thankful for any thing in the world, than he was for his Bible, nor desired it from a better principle.

After feveral religious discourses, I desired the young woman to give me an account of the anguish she felt when she was starving to death for hunger; to which she readily consented, and began in the

following manner.

" Sir," faid he, all our victuals being gone, after I had fasted one day, my stomach was very sickish, and at the approach of night, I was inclined to yawning, and fleepy. When I flept upon the couch three hours, I awaked a little refreshed: three hours after my stomach being more and more fickish, I lay down again, but could not sleep, being very faint and ill. Thus I passed the second day with a strange variety, first hungry, then fick again, with retchings to vomit: that night I dreamed I was at Barbadoes, buying plenty of provisions, and dined heartily. But when I awaked, my spirits were exceedingly sunk, to find myself in the extremity of famine. There was but one glass of wine, which being mixed with fugar, I drank up; but for want of substance to digest upon, the sumes of it got into my head, and made me fenfeless for fome

some time. The third day I was so ravenous and furious, that I could have eaten a little child if it had come in my way; during which time I was as. mad as any creature in Bedlam. In one of these fits I fell down, and struck my face against the corner of a pallet-bed, where my mistress lay: the blood gushed out of my nose, but my excessive bleeding both the violence of the fever and the ravenous part of the hunger abated. After this I grew fick again, strove to vomit, but could not; then bleeding a fecond time. I swooned away as dead; when I came to myfelf, I had a dreadful gnawing pain in my stomach, which went off towards night, with a longing defire for food. I took a draught of water and sugar, but it came up again; then I drank water without fugar; and that staid with me. I laid me down on the bed, praying God would take me away; after I had flumbered, I thought myfelf a-dying, therefore recommended my foul to God, and wished some body would: throw me into the fea. All this while my departing mistress lay by me; the last bit of bread she had, fhe gave it to her dear child, my young mafter. The morning after, I fell into a violent paffion of crying, and after that into hunger. I espied the blood that came from my nose in a basin, which immediately I swallowed up. At night I had the usual variations, as pain in the stomach, sick, sleepy,... and ravenous; and I had no thoughts but that I should die before morning. In the morning came: on terrible gripings in my bowels. At this time I heard my young master's lamentations; by which Funderstood his mother was dead: Soon after the D d. 3. failor amoi

failor cried, A fail, a fail, hallooing as if they were distracted, for joy of that relief, which afterwards we received from your hands. So do on sale los

Surely never was a more distinct account of flarving to death than this. But to return to the disposition of things among my people, I did not take any notice to them of the floop that I had framed neither would I leave them two pieces of brass cannon, or the two quarter-deck guns that I had on board, left, upon any difguft, they should have separated, or turned pirates, and fo made the island a den of thieves, instead of a plantation of fober pious people: but leaving them in a flourishing condition, with a promise to send them further relief from Brasil, as sheep, hogs, and cows, (being obliged to kill the latter at fea, having no hay to feed them), I went on board the ship again the first of May 1695, after having been twenty days among them: and next morning, giving them a falute of five guns at parting, we fet fail for the Brasils. The third day to wards evening, there happening a calm, and the current being very strong, we were drove to the N. N. E. towards the land. Some hours after we perceived the sea covered as it were with something very black, not casily at first to be discovered: upon which our chief mate ascending the throuds a little way, and taking a view with a perspective glas, he cries our An army! An army, you fool faid I what do you mean? Nay, Sir faid he don't be angry, I affure you it is not only an army, but a fleet too; for I believe there are a thousand canoes paddling along, and making with great hafte towards us. Indeed

Indeed every one of us were furprifed at this relation; and my nephew the captain could not tell what to think of, but thought we should all be devoured. Nor was I free from concern, when I confidered how much we were becalmed, and what a strong current set towards the shore : however, I encouraged him not to be afraid, but bring the ship to an anchor, as soon as we were certain that we must engage them. Accordingly we did for furled all our fails: as to the favages, we feared nothing, but only that they might fet the ship on fire; to prevent which, I ordered them to get their boats out, and fasten them, one close by the head, and the other by the stern well manned, with skeets and buckets to extinguish the flamesshould it so happen. The favages soon came up with us, but there were not fo many as the mate had faid; for instead of a thousand canoes, there were only one hundred and twenty; too many in deed for us, feveral of their canoes containing about fixteen or seventeen men.

As they approached us, they seemed to be in the greatest amazement, not knowing what to make of us. They rowed round the ship, which occasioned us to call to the men in the boats, not to suffer them to come near them. Hereupon they beckened the savages to keep back, which they accordingly did; but at their retreat they let sly about sifty arrows among us, and very much wounded one of our men in the longboat. I called to them not to sire upon any account, but handing them down some deal-boards, the carpenters made a kind of a sence to shield them from the arrows.

In half an hour after, they came so near aftern of us, that we had a perfect fight of them; then they rowed a little farther out, till they came directly alongfide of us, and then approachod fo near, as they could hear us speak this nude me order all our men to keep close, and geratheir guns ready. In the mean time I ordered Friday to go out upon deck and alk them in his language what they meant? No fooner did he do fo, but fix of the favages, who were in the foremost cause, stooping down, shewed us their naked backfides, as much as to fay in English, Kifs our ; but Friday quickly knew what this meant, by immediately crying out they were going to fhoot; unfortunately for him, poor creature! who fell under the cloud of there hundred arrows, no less than seven piercing though his body, killing one of the best of servants, faithfulest of companions in all my folitudes and afflictions.

So enraged was I at the death of poor Friday, that the guns, which before were charged with only powder, to frighten them, I ordered to be leaded with finall shot; nor did the gunners fail in their aim, but at this broadfide split and overfet thirteen or sourteen of their canoes, which killed numbers of them, and set the rest a-swimming: the others, frightened out of their wits, little regarding their sellows drowning, scoured away as fast as they could. One poor wretch our people took up, swimming for his life, an hour after. He was very sullen at first, so that he would neither eat nor speak: but I took a way to cure him, by ordering them to throw him.

into the sea, which they did, and then he came swimming back like a cork, calling in his tongue, as I suppose to save him. So we took him on board, but it was a long time before we could make him speak or understand English; yet when we had taught him, he told us they were going with their kings to sight a great battle: and when we asked him, what made them come up to us? he said, to make de great wonder look: where it is to be noted, that those natives, and those of Africa, always add two e's at the end of English words, as makee, takee, and the like, from which it is a very difficult thing to make them break off.

Being now under fail, we took our last farewell of poor honest Friday, and interred him with all possible decency and solemnity; putting him into a cossin, and committing him to the deep, at the same time causing eleven guns to be fired for him. Thus ended the life of one of the most grateful, faithful, honest, and affectionate servants, that ever any man was blessed with in the world.

Having now a fair wind for Brazil, in about twelve days time we made land in the latitude of five degrees fouth of the line. Four days we kept on S. by E. in fight of shore when we made cape St. Augustine, and in three days we came to an anchor off of the bay of All Saints. I had great difficulty here to get leave to hold correspondence on shore; for neither the figure of my partner, my two merchant-trustees, nor the same of my wonderful preservation in the island, could procure me the favour, till such time as the prior of the monastery of the Augustines (to whom I had given

for me personally, with the captain and one more, together with eight sailors, to come on shore; upon this condition, that we should not land any goods out of the ship, or carry any person away without licence: I found means however to get on shore three bales of English goods, such as sine broad cloth, stuffs, and some linen, which I brought as a present for my partner, who had sent me on board a present of fresh provisions, wine and sweatmeats, worth about thirty moidores including some tobacco, and three or four fine gold medals.

Here I delivered my partner in goods to the value of 100l. Sterling, and obliged him to fet up the floop I bought, for the use of my island, in order to fend them refreshments: and so active was he in this matter, that he had the vessel finished in a few days, to the master of which I gave particular instructions to find the place. I foon loaded him with a small cargo; and one of our failors offered to settle there, upon my letter to the Spanish governor, if I would allot him tools and a plantation. This I willingly granted, and gave him a favage we had taken prisoner to be his slave. All things being ready for the voyage, my old planter told me, there was an acquaintance of his, a Brasil planter, who having fallen under the displeasure of the church, and in fear of Inquisition, which obliged him to be concealed, would be glad of fuch an opportunity to make his escape, with his wife and two daughters; and if I would allot them a plantation in my island, he would give them a small flock to begin with, for that the officers had already

ready seized his effects and estate, and lest him nothing but a little household stuff, and two slaves. This request I prefently granted, concealing him and his family on board our ship, till such time as the floop, (where all the effects were) was gotten out of the bay and then we put them on board who carried some materials, and plants for planting sugar-canes, along with them. By this floop, among other things, I fent my fubjects 3 milch cows and 5 calves, about 22 hogs, 3 fows big with pig, 2 mares and a stone horse. I also engaged three Portugal women to go for sake of the Spainiards which with the perfecuted man's two daughters were fufficient fince the rest had wives of their own, though in another country: all which cargo arrived fafe, no doubt to their exceeding coinfort, who, with this addition, were about fixty or feventy people, befides children.

At this place my truly honest and pious clergyman left me; for a ship being ready to set sail for Lisbon, he asked me leave to go thither; but I assure you, it was with the greatest reluctancy I parted from a person, whose virtue and

piety merited the greatest esteem.

From the Brasils we made directly over the Atlantic ocean to the Cape of good Hope, having a tolerable good voyage, steering for the most part S. E. We were on a trading voyage, and had a supercargo on board, who was to direct all the ship's motions after she arrived at the Cape; only being limitted to a certain number of days, for stay, by charter-party, at the several ports she was to go to. At the Cape we only took

in fresh water, and then sailed for the coast of Coromandel: we were there informed, that a French man of war of 50 guns, and two large merchant-ships, were sailed for the Indies, but we heard no more of them.

In our passage we touched at the island of Madagascar, where, though the inhabitants are naturally sierce and treacherous, and go constantly armed with bows and lances, yet for some time they treated us civilly enough; and, in exchange for knives, scissars, and other trisles they brought us eleven good fat bullocks, which we took partly for present fresh victuals, and the remainder to

falt for the ship's use.

So curious was I to view every corner of the world where I came to, that I went on shore, as often as I could. One evening, when on shore, we observed numbers of the people stand gazing at us at a distance. We thought ourselves in no danger, as they had hitherto used us kindly. However, we cut three boughs out of a treee, Ricking them at a distance from us, which it seems, in that country is not only a token of truce and amity but when poles or boughs are fet up on the other side, it is a fign the truce is accepted. In these treaties, however there is one principal thing to be regarded that neither party come beyond one another's three poles or boughs; so that the middle space is not only fecure, but is also allowed as a market for traffic and commerce: when the truce is thus accepted, they slick up their javelins and lances at the first poles, and come on unarmed; but if any violence is offered, away they run to their poles, talc

take up their weapons, and then the truce is at an end. This evening it happened that a greater number of people than usual, both men and women, traded among us for fuch toys as we had, with fuch great civility, that we made us a little tent of large boughs of trees, some of the men resolving to lie on shore all night. But for my part, I and some others took our lodging in the boat, with boughs of trees spread over it, having a fail spread at the bottom to lie upon. About two o'clock in the morning, we were awakened by the firing of mulkets, and our men crying out for help, or else they would all be murdered. Scarce had we time to get the boat ashore, when our men came plunging themselves into the water, with about four hundred of the islanders at their heels. We took up seven of the men, three of them very much wounded, and one left: behind killed, while the enemy poured their arrows fo thick among us, that we were forced to make a barricade, with boards lying at the fide of the boat, to shield us from danger: and having got ready our fire arms, we returned them a volley, which wounded feveral of them, as we could hear by their cries. In this condition we lay till break of day, and then making fignals of diffress to the ship, which my nephew the captain heard and understood, he weighed anchor, and stood as near the shore as possible, and then fent another boat with ten hands in her to assist us; but we called to them not to come near, informing them of our unhappy condition. However, they ven-E. e tured:

tured; when one of the men taking the end of a tow-line in his hand, and keeping our boat between him and our adversaries swam on board us. and made fast our line to the boat; upon this, flipping our cables, they towed us out of the reach of their arrows, and quickly after, a broadfide was given them from the ship, which made a most dreadful havock among them. When we got on board, we examined into the occasion of this fray; the men who fled informed us, that an old woman who fold milk within the poles, had brought a young woman with her who carried roots or herbs, the fight of whom fo much temped our men, that they offered rudeness to the maid at which the old woman fet up a great cry; nor would the failors part from the prize, but carried her among the trees, while the old woman went and brought a whole army down upon them. At the beginning of the attack, one of our men was killed with a lance, and the fellow who began the mischief paid dear for his mistress, though as yet we did not know what had become of him; the rest luckily escaped. The third night after the action being curious to understand how affairs flood, I took the supercargo and twenty stout fellows with me, and landed about two hours before midnight, at the same place where those Indians flood the night before and there we divided our men into two bodies, the boatswain commanding one and I the other. It was so dark that we could fee no body neither did we hear any voice near us; but by and by the boatswain falling over a dead

dead body, we agreed to halt till the moon should rife, which we knew would be in an hour after. We perceived here no fewer than two and thirty bodies upon the ground, whereof two were not quite dead. Satisfied with this discovery, I was for going on board again; but the boatswain, and the rest told me, they would make a visit to the Indian town, where those dogs, so they called them, resided, asking me at the same time to go along with them; for that they did not doubt, besides getting a good booty, but they should find Tom Jeffery there, for that was the unhappy man we miffed. But I utterly refused to go, and commanded them back, being unwilling to hazard their lives, as the safety of the ship wholly depended upon them. Notwithstanding all I could fay to them, they all left me but one, and the supercargo: so we three returned to the boat, where a boy was left, refolving to stay till they returned. At parting I told them I supposed most of them would run the same fate with Tom Jeffery. To this they replied, Come boys, come along, we'll warrant we'll come off safe enough; and so away they went, notwithstanding all my admonitions, either concerning their own fafety, or the preservation of the ship. Indeed they were gallantly armed, every man having a musket bayonet and pistol, besides cutlasses, hangers, poleaxes, and hand granadoes. They came to a few Indian houses at first which notbeing the town they expected, they went further, and finding a cow tied to a tree, they concluded that she would be E e 2

a sufficient guide, and so it proved, for after they untied her, she led them directly to the town, which confifted of above two hundred houses. several families living in some of the hurs together. At their arrival, all being in a profound sleep, the failors agreed to divide themselves into three bodies, and fet three parts of the town on fire at once, to kill those that were escaping and plunder the rest of the houses. Thus desperately resolved, they went to work; but the first party had not gone far, before they called out to the rest, that they had found Tom Jeffery; whereupon they all ran up to the place, and found the poor fellow indeed hanging up naked by one arm, and bis throat cut almost from ear to ear: in a house that was hard by the tree they found fixteen or feventeen Indians who had been concerned in the fray, two or three of them being wounded, who were not gone to fleep; this house they fet on fire first, and in a few minutes after, five or fix places more in the town appeared in flames. conflagration spread like wild-fire, their houses being all of wood, and covered with flags or rushes. The poor affrighted inhabitants endeavoured to run out to fave their lives. but they were driven back into the flames by the failors, and killed without mercy. At the first house above mentioned, after the boatswain had slain two with his pole-axe, he threw a hand granado into the house, which bursting, made a terrible havock, killing and wounding most of them; and their king and most of his train, who were then

in that house, fell victims to their fury, every creature of them being either smothered or burnt. All this while they never fired a gun, lest the people should awaken faster than they could overpower them. But the fire awakened them fast enough, which obliged our fellows to keep together in bodies. By this time the whole town was in a flame, yet their fury rather increased, calling out to one another to remember Tom Jeffery. The terrible light of this conflagration made me very uneafy, and roused my nephew the captain and the rest of his men, who knew nothing of the matter. When he perceived this dreadful smoke and heard the guns go off, he readily concluded his men were in danger; he therefore takes another boat, and comes ashore himself with thirteen men well armed. He was greatly furprised to see me and only two men in the boat, but more so when I told him the story; but though I argued with him, as I did with his men, about the danger of the voyage, the interest of the merchants and owners, and the fafety of the ship, yet my nephew like the rest, declared that he would rather lose the ship, his voyage, his life. and all, than his men should be lost for want of help; and so away he went. For my part feeing him resolved to go, I had not power to stay be-He ordered the pinnace back again for twelve men more, and then we marched directly as the flame guided us. But furely never was fuch a scene of horror beheld or more dismal cries heard except when Oliver Cromwell took Drog-E e 3

heda in Ireland, where he neither spared man,

woman, or child.

The first object I think we met with, was the ruins of one of their habitations, before which lay four men and three women killed, and two more burnt to death among the fire, which was now decaying. Nothing could appear more barbarous than this revenge: none more cruel than the authors of it. As we went on the fire increafed, and the cry proceeded in proportion. We had not gone much farther, when we beheld three naked women, followed by fixteen or feventeen men flying with the greatest swiftness from our men, who shot one of them in our fight. When they perceived us, whom they supposed also their murderers, they set up a most dreadful shriek, and both of them swooned away in the fright. This was a fight which might have foftened the hardest heart; and in pity we took some ways to let them know we would not hurt them, while the poor creatures with bended knees and lifted-up hands, made piteous lamentation to us to fave their lives. I ordered our men not to hurt any of the poor creatures whatfoever; but being willing to understand the occasion of all this, I went among these unhappy wretches, who neither understood me, nor the good I meant However being resolved to put an end to this barbarity I ordered the men to follow me. We had not gone fifty yards before we came up with the boatswain, with four of our men at his

heels, all of them covered with blood and dust, and in fearch of more people to fatiate their vengeance. As foon as we faw them, we called out and made them understand who we were; upon which they came up to us, fetting up a halloo of triumph, in token that more help was come. Noble captain, said he to my nephew, I am glad you are come: we have not half done with thete villanous hell-hound dogs, we'll root out the very nation of them from the earth, and kill more than poor Tom has hairs upon his head: and thus he went on till I interrupted him. Bloodthirsty dog! said I, will your cruelty never end? I charge you touch not one creature more; stop your hands, and stand still, or you are a dead man this moment. Why Sir faid he, you neither know who you are protecting, or what they have done: but pray come hither, and behold an in-stance of compassion, if such can merit your elemency: and with that he shewed me the poor fellow with his throat cut, hanging upon the tree

Indeed here was enough to fill their breafts with rage, which however I thought had gone too far, agreeable to these words of Jacob to his sons Simeon and Levi, cursed be their anger, for it was sierce, and their wrath for it was cruel. But it this sight made my nephew and the rest as bad as they; nay my nephew declared, his concern was only for his men, as for the people, not a soul of them ought to live. Upon this the boat-swain and eight more directly turned about, and went

went to finish the intended tragedy; which being out of my power to prevent, I returned back both from the dismal sight and the pitious cries of those unfortunate creatures, who were made victims to their fury. Indeed it was an egregious piece of folly in me to return to the boat with but one attendant; and I had very near paid for it, having narrowly escaped forty armed Indians, who had been alarmed by the conflagration; but having passed the place where they stood, I got to the boat accompanied with the supercargo and so went on board, fending the pinnace back again, to affift the men in what might happen. When I had got to the boat, the fire was almost extinguished, and the noise abated; but I had scarce been half an hour on board the ship when I heard another volley given by our failors, and faw a great fmoke which, as I afterwards found, was our men falling upon those houses and persons that stood between them and the fea: but here they spared the wives and children, and killed only then, to the number of about fixteen or feventeen. By the time they got on the shore, the pinnace and ship's boat were ready to receive them, and they all got fafe on board not one of them having received the least hurt except two, one of whom strained his foot, and the other burnt his hand a little; for they met with no refistance, the poor Indians being unprepared, amazed and confounded.

I was extremely angry with every one of them but particularly with the captain, who instead of cooling the rage of the men, had prompted them

on to farther mischief: nor could he make me any other excuse but that as he was a man he could not mafter his passions, at the fight of one of his men fo cruelly murdered. As for the rest, knowing they were not under my command, they took no notice of my anger; but rather boafted of their revenge. According to all their accounts, they killed or destroyed about one hundred and fifty men, women and children besides burning the town to ashes. They took their companion Tom. Jeffery from the tree, covered him with some of the ruins, and fo left him. But however this action of our men might feem to them justifiable, yet I al-ways openly condemned it, with the appellation of The massacre of Madagascar. For though they had flain this Jefferys, yet certainly he was the first aggressor, by attempting to violate the chastity of a young innocent woman, who ventured down to them on the faith of the public capitulation, which was so treacherously broken.

While we were under fail the boatswain would oftten defend the b'oodly action, by saying, That the
Indians had broke the truce the night before, by
shooring one of our men without just prevocation:
and what if the poor fellow had taken a little liberty with the wench, he ought not to have been
murdered in so villanous a manner: and that they
had acted nothing but what the divine laws
commissioned to be done to such homicides.
However, I was in the same mind as before, telling
them that they were murderers, and bid them
depend

depend upon't, that God would blast their voyage for such an unparallelled piece of barbarity.

When we came into the gulf of Persia, five of our men, who ventured on shore, were either killed or made flaves by the Arabians, the rest of them having scarce time to escape to their boat. This made me upbraid them afresh with the just retribution of Heaven for fuch actions: upon which the boatswaiu very warmly asked me, whether those men on whom the tower of Siloam fell, were greater finners than the rest of the Galileans? and besides, Sir, said he, none of these five poor men that are lost were with us at the massacre of Madagafcar, as you call it, and therefore your repre-hension is very unjust, and your application improper. Besides, added he, you are continually using the men very ill, upon this account, and being but a passenger yourself, we are not obliged to bear it; nor can we tell what ill defigns you may have to bring us to judgment for it in England; and therefore if you do not leave this discourse, as also not concern yourself with any of our affairs, I will leave the ship, and not fail among such dangerous company.

All this I heard very patiently; but it being often repeated, I at length told him, the concern I had on board was none of his business; that I was a considerable owner in the ship, and therefore had a right to speak in common, and that I was no way accountable to him, nor to any body else. As no more passed for some time after, I thought all had been over. At this time we were

in the road of Bengal, where, going on shore with the fupercargo, one day, in the evening, as I was preparing to go on board, one of the men came to me, and told me, I need not trouble myfelf to come to the boat, for that the cockswain and others had ordered him not to carry me on board any more: This infolent meffage much furprised me; yet I gave him no answer to it, but went directly and acquainted the supercargo, intreating him to go on board, and, by acquainting the captain with it, prevent the mutiny which I perceived would happen. But before I had spoke this, the matter was effected on board: for no fooner was he gone off in the boat, but the boatswain, gunner, carpenter, and all the inferior officers, came to the quarter-deck, defiring to speak with the captain; and there the boatswain made a long harangue, exclaiming against me, as before mentioned; that if I had not gone ashore peaceably for my own diversion, they by violence would have compelled me for their fatisfaction; that as they had shipped with the captain, so they would faithfully serve him; but if I did not quit the ship, or the captain oblige me to it, they would leave the ship immediately: hereupon, turning his face about by way of fignal, they all cried out, ONE and ALL, ONE and ALL.

You may be fure, that though my nephew was a man of great courage, yet he could not but be furprifed at their fudden and unexpected behaviour: and though he talked stoutly to them, and afterwards expostulated with them, that in common justice to me, who was a considerable owner in the

ship,

ship, they could not turn me, as it were, out of my own house, which might bring their lives in danger, should they ever be taken in England: nay, though he invited the boatswain on shore to accommodate matters with me, yet all this, I say, signified nothing; they would have nothing to do with me; and they were refolved to go on shore, if I came on board. Well, faid my nephew, if you are fo refolved, permit me talk with him, and then I have done: and so he came to me, giving me an account of their resolution, how one and all defigned to forfake the ship when I came on board, for which he was mightily concerned. I am glad to fee you, nephew, faid I, and rejoice it is no worse, fince they have not rebelled against you: I only defire you to fend my necessary things on shore, with a sufficient sum of money, and I will find my way to England as well as I can. Though this grieved my nephew to the heart, yet there was no remedy but compliance; in short, all my necessaries were sent me, and so this matter was over in a few hours.

I think I was now near a thousand leagues farther off England by sea, than at my little kingdom, except this difference, that I might travel by land over the Great Mogul's country to Surat, from thence up to Bassora, by sea up the Persian gulf, then take the way of the caravans over the Arabian desert to Aleppo and Scanderoon, there take shipping to Italy, and so travel by land into France, and from thence cross the sea to England.

My nephew left me two persons to attend me;

one of them was his fervant, and the other clerk to the purfer, who engaged to be mine. I took lodgings in an English woman's house, where several French, one English, and two Italian merchants resided. The handsome entertainment I met with here, occasioned me to stay nine months, confidering what course I should take. Some English goods I had with me of great value, besides a thousand pieces of eight, and a letter of credence for more, if there was fuch necessity. The goods I foon disposed of to advantage, and bought here feveral good diamonds, which I could eafily carry about with me. One morning the English merchant came to me, as being very intimate together, Countryman, said he, I have a project to communicate to you, which I hope will fuit to both our advantage. To be short, Sir, we are both in a remote part of the world from our country; but yet in a place where men of business may get a great deal of money. Now, if you will put a thousand pounds to my thousand pounds, we will hire a ship to our fatisfaction; you shall be captain, I will be merchant, and we'll go a trading voyage to China; for why should we lie still like drones, while the whole world is in a continual motion?

This propofal foon got my confent, being very agreeable to my rambling genius; and the more so, because I looked upon my countryman to be a very fincere person: it required some time before we could get a vessel to our mind, and failors to man it accordingly: at length we bought a ship, and got an English mate, boatswain, and gunner, a Dutch carpenter, and three Portuguese foremast Ff

men ;

men; and, for want of others, made shift with Indian seamen. We first sailed to Achin, in the island of Sumatra, and then to Siam, where we bartered our wares for some arrack and opium, the last of which bore a great price among the Chinese: in a word, we went up to Suskan, making a very great voyage: and, after eight months time, I returned to Bengal, very well satisfied with this adventure, having not only got a sufficient quantity of money, but an insight of getting a great deal more.

The next voyage my friend proposed to me, was to go among the Spice islands, and bring home a load of cloves from the Manillas, or thereabouts, islands belonging partly to Spain, but where the Dutch trade very considerably. We were not long preparing for this voyage, which we made no less successful than the last, touching at Borneo, and several other places which I do not perfectly remember, and returning home in about five months time. We soon sold our spices which were chiefly cloves, and some nutmegs, to the Person merchants, who carried them away from the gulf; and in short, making five to one advantage, we were loaded with money.

Not long after my friend and I had made up our accounts, to our entire fatisfaction, there came in a Dutch coafter from Batavia, of about two hundred tons. The crew of this vessel pretended themselves so sickly, that there were not hands sufficient to undertake a voyage; and the captain having given out that he intended to go to Europe, public notice was given that the ship was

to be told. No fooner did this come to our ears, but we bought the ship, paid the master, and took possession. We would also have very willingly have entertained some of the men; but they, having received their share of booty, were not to be found, being altogether fled to Agra, the great city of the Mogul's residence; and from thence were to travel to Surat, and so by fea to the Persian gulf. And indeed they had reason to fly in this manner: for the truth of it was, the pretended captain was gunner only, and not the commander > that having been on a trading voyage, they were attacked on shore by the Malayans, who killed three men, and the captain; after whose death the other eleven men run away with the ship to the bay of Bengal, and left the mate and five men more on shore; but of this affair we shall have occasion to speak at more length hereafter.

However they came by the ship, we thought we bought it honestly; neither did we suspect any thing of the matter; when the man shewed us a bill of sale for the ship (undoubtedly forged) to one Emanuel Clostershoven, which name he went by. And so, without any more to do, we picked up some Dutch and English seamen, resolving for another voyage for cloves among the Philippine and Malacca islands; in short, we continued this sive or six years, trading from port to port with extraordinary success; in the seventh year we undertook a voyage to China, designing to touch at Siam, and buy some rice by the way. In this voyage, contrary winds beat us up and

down for a considerable time among the islands in the straits of Malacca. No sooner were we clear of those rugged seas, but we perceived our ship had sprung a leak, which obliged us to put into the river Cambodia, which lies north-

ward of the gulf, and goes up to Siam.

One day as I was on shore refreshing myself, there comes to me an Englishman, who was a gunner's mate on board an English East-India ship, riding up the river, near the city of Cambodia. Sir, said he, you may wonder at my business, having never feen me in your life; but though I am a stranger, I have something to tell you that very nearly concerns you; and indeed it is the imminent danger, you are in, has moved me to give you this timely notice. Danger! faid I, what danger ? I know of none, except my thip, being leaky, for which I design to have her run aground to-morrow morning. Sir, said he, I hope you will be better employed, when you shall hear what I have to say to you. You know the town of Cambodia is about 15 leagues up this river; about three leagues on this side of it, there he two Dutch and three English Ships. And would you venture here, without considering what strength you had to engage them? I knew not what he meant by this difcourse, and turning short upon him : Sir, said I, I know no reason I have to be afraid either of any English or Dutch ships: I am no interleper, and what business have they then with me? Well, Sir, faid the man, if you do think yourself secure, all as I can fay, you must take your chance : however, I am very forry you are so deaf to good advice;

advice; but I affure you if you do not put to fea immediately you will, be attacked by five longboats full of men, hanged yourself for a pirate, if you are taken, and the particulars examined afterwards. I thought Sir, added he, I might have met with better reception for such a singular piece of service. Sir, said I, I was never ungrateful to any man : but pray explain yourself and I'll go on board this minute, whether the leak be stopped or no. Why, Sir faid he, to be short, because time is precious, the matter is this: You know well enough that you was with the Ship at Sumatra, where your captain was murdered by the Malayans. with three of his sailors, and that either you or some who were on board you, ran away with the ship, and are since turned pirates at sea. Now, Sir, this is the sum f what I had to say; and I can positively affure you, that if you be taken, you will be executed without much ceremony; for undoubtedly you cannot but be sensible what little law merchant-ships shew to pirates, whenever they fall into their unmerciful bands.

Sir, said I, I thank you for your kind information: and though I am sure no man could come more honestly by the ship than I have done; yet knowing their enterprise, and being satisfied of your honest intention, I'll be upon my defence. Prithee, Sir, said the man, don't talk of being upon your defence, the best that you can make is to be out of danger; and therefore if you have any regard to your life, and the lives of your men, take the advantage, without fail, of putting out to sea at high water; by which means, as you F f 2.

have a whole tide before you' you will be gone too far out of their reach before they can come down.

I am mighty well fatisfied, said I, in this particular, and of your kindness, which merits my greatest esteem: pray, Sir, what amends shall I make you? He replied, I know not what amends you are willing to make, because you may have some doubts of its certainty; but, to convince you of the truth of what I say, I have one offer to make to you. On board one of the English ships, I have nineteen months pay due to me, and this Dutchman that is with me has seven months pay due to him, which if you w'll make good to us, we will go along with you. If you shall find, that there is nothing in what we have said, then we shall defire nothing; but when you are convinced that we have saved the ship, your life, and the lives of the men, we will leave the whole to your generosity.

So reasonable did this every way apppear, that

I immediately consented, we went directly on board. As soon as we came on board, my partner calls joyfully out, That they had stopped the leak! Well, thank God, said I, but pray let us weigh anchor forthwith. Weigh! said he, what is the meaning of this hurry? Pray ask no questions, said I, but all hands to work, without losing a moment's time: upon which, in great surprise, the captain was called, who immediately ordered the anchor to be got up; and though the tide was not quite down, yet being assisted with a little land breeze, we stood out to sea. I then called my partner into the cabin, and related the story at large, which was consirmed; and more amplified

amplified by the two men I had brought on board. Scarce had we finished our discourse upon this head, but a failor came to the cabin-door, with a meffage from the captain, that we were chafed by five floops full of armed men. Very well, faid I, it is plain now there is something in it. And fo going upon deck, I told all the men there was a design for seizing the ship, and of executing us for pirates; and asked them, whether they would faithfully stand by us and by one another? To which they unanimously replied, that they would fight to their last drop of blood. I then asked the captain which way he thought best for us to mannage the battle? Sir, faid he, the only method is to keep them off with our great shot as long as we are able, and then have recourse to our small arms; and when both thefe fail us, then retire to close quarters, when perhaps the enemy, wanting materials, can neither break open our bulk-heads, nor get in upon us. Mean time the gunner was ordered to bring two guns to bear fore and aft out of the steerage, and to load them with musket bullets, and small peices of iron; and the deck being cleared, we prepared for the engagement, still, however, keeping out at fea. The boats followed us with all the fail they could make, and we could perceive the two foremost were English, which outsailed the rest by two leagues, and which we found would come up with us: hereupon we fired a gun without ball, imitating that they should bring to, and we put out a slag of truce, as a fignal for parley; but finding them crouding after us, till they came within shot, we took in white, and hanging out the red flag, immediately.

ately fired at them with ball: we then called to them with a speaking trumpet, bidding them at

their peril keep off.

But all this fignified nothing; for, depending upon the strength that followed them, they were refolutely bent for mischief; hereupon I ordered them to bring the ship to, by which means, they lying upon our broadlide, we let fly at them at once, one of whom carried away the stern of the hindermost boat, and obliged them not only to take down their fail, but made them all run to the head of the boat, to keep them from finking: and so she lay by, having enough of it. - In the mean time we prepared to welcome the foremost boat in the same manner. While we were doing this, one of the three hindermost boats came up to the relief of that which was disabled, and took the men out of her. We again called to parley with them; but instead of an answer, one of the boats came close under our stern: whereupon our gunner let fly his two chase. guns, but missing, the men in the boat shouted, and waving their caps, came on with greater fury. To repair his feeming difgrace, the gunner foon got ready, and firing the second time, did a great deal of mischief among the enemy. We waved again, and bringing our quarter to bear upon them, fired three guns more, when we found the boat a-finking, and feveral men already in the fea; hereupon manning, our pinnace, I gave orders to fave as many as they could, and instantly to come on board, because the rest of their boats were approaching: accordingly they did fo, and took up three of them, one of whom was almost past recovery; and then crouding,

on board, we stood out farther to sea, so that the other three boats gave over their chase, when they came up to the first two. Thus delivered from imminent danger, we changed our course to the castward, quite out of the course of all European ships.

Being now at fea, and enquiring more particularly of the two seamen, the meaning of all this the Dutchman, at once, let us into the fecret. He told us, that the fellow who fold us the ship was an arrant thief, who had run away with her; that the captain was treacherously murdered on the coast of Malacca by the natives there, with three, of his men; that he, the Dutchman, and four more. being obliged to have recourse to the woods for their safety, at length escaped by means of a Dutch thip, in its way to China, which had fent their boat on shore for fresh water: That, after this, he went to Batavia, where two of the feamen belonging to the ship (who had deserted the rest in their travels) arrived, and there gave an account that the fellow who ran away with the ship had fold her at Bengal to a fet of pirates, who went acruifing, and had already taken one English and two Dutch ships richly laden.

Now, though this was absolutely false, yet concerning us directly, my partner truly said, that our deliverance was to be esteemed so much the more, by reason, had we fallen into their hands, we could have expected nothing from them but immediate death, considering our accusers would have been our judges: and therefore his opinion was,

to return directly to Bengal, where, being known, we could prove how honeftly we came by the thip of whom we bought her, and the like, and where we were fure of some justice; at least would not be hanged first, and judged afterwards. I was at first of my partner's opinion; but when I had more feriously considered of the matter, I told him we ran a great hazard in attempting to return, being on the wrong fide of the straits of Malacca, and that if, upon alarm given, we should be taken by the Dutch of Batavia, or English elsewhere, or running away would be a sufficient evidence to condemn us. This danger indeed startled not only my partner but likewife all the ship's company; fo we changed our former resolution, and resolved to go to the coast of Tonquin, and so to that of China, where pursuing our first design as to trade, we might likewise have an oportunity to dispose of the ship one way or other, and to return to Bengal in any country vessel we could procure. this being agreed to, we steered away N. N. E. about 50 leagues off the usual course to the east, which put us to some inconveniences. As the wind blew fleadily against us, our voyage became very tedious, and we began to be afraid of want of provision; and, what was still worse, we apprehended, that those ships, from whose boats we had escaped, was bound to China, they might get before us, and have given fresh information, which might create another vigorous pursuit. Indeed I could not help being grieved, when I confidered that I, who had never wronged or defrauded any person in my life, was now pursued like a common theif;

thief; and, if taken, to run the greatest danger of being executed as fuch; and, though innocent, I found myfelf under the necessity of flying for my fafety, and thereby escape being brought to shame, of which I was even more afraid than of death itself. It was easy to read my dejection in my countenance. My mind was oppressed, like those unhappy innocent persons, who being overpowered by blasphemous and perjured evidences, wickedly refolved to take away their lives, or ruin their reputation, have no other recourse in this world to ease their forrow, but fighs, prayers, and tears. My partner feeing me fo concerned, encouraged me as well as he could: and after describing to me the feveral ports of that coast, he told me, he would either put in on the coast of Cochinchina, or else in the bay of Tonquin, from whence we might go to Macoa, a town once possessed by the Portuguese, and where still many European families resided.

To this place we steered, and early the next morning came in sight of the coast; but thought it advisible to put into a small river, where we could, either overland, or by the ship's pinnace, know what vessels were in any port thereabouts, This happy step proved our deliverance; for next morning there came to the bay of Tonquin two Dutch ships, and a third without any colours: and in the evening two English ships steered the same course. The river where we were, was but small, and run but a few leagues up the country northward: the country was wild and barbarous, and the people theives, having no correspondence with any other nation, dealing only in sish, oil, and such gross commodities.

modities; and one barbarous custom they still retained, that when any vessel was unhappily shipwrecked upon their coast, they make the men prisoners or slaves; so that now we might fairly say we were surrounded by enemies both by sea and land.

As the ship had been leaky, we took the oportunity, in this place, to fearch her, and to stop up the places which let in the water. We accordingly lightened her, and bringing our guns and other moveable things to one fide, we effayed to bring her down, that we might come at her bottom: but upon fecond confideration, we did not think it fafe to let her lie on dry ground, neither indeed was the place convenient for it. The inhabitants, not used to such a fight as to see a ship lie down on one fide, and heel in towards the shore, not perceiving her men, who were at work on her bottom, with stages and boats on the off-side, prefently imagined the ship had been cast away, and lay fast on the ground. Agreeable to this supposition, they surrounded us with ten or twelve large boats, with a resolution, undoubtedly, to plunder the ship, and to carry away those they found alive for flaves to their king. But when they perceived our men hard at work on the ship's bottom and side, washing, graving, and stopping her, it filled them all with fuch furprife, that they stood gazing as though they were confounded. Nor could we imagine what their defign was; however, for fear of danger, we handed down arms and ammunitton to those at work, in order to defend themselves; and indeed this precuation was abiolutely

absolutely necessary; for in a quarter of an hour after, the natives, concluding it was really a shipwreck, and that we were faving our lives and goods, which they thought belonged to them, came down upon our men, as though it had been in a line of battle. We lay at present but in a very unfit posture to fight; and before the stages could be got down, or the men in the boat come on board as they were ordered, the Cochinchineses were upon them, and two of their boats boarding our longboat, they began to lay hold of our men as prifoners. The first they seized was a stout English failor, who never fired his mufket, like a fool, as I imagined, but laid it down in the boat; but he knew what he was doing; for by main force he dragged the pagan out of the boat into ours by the two ears, and knocked his brains out against the boat's gunnel: a Durchman that was next him fnatched up the musket, and knocked down five more with the butt-end of it: however, this was doing very little to their number; but a strange unexpected accident, which rather merits laughter than any thing elfe, gave our men a complete victory over them.

It feems the carpenter, who was preparing to grave the outlide of the ship, as well as to pay the seams, where he calked to stop the leaks, had gotten two kettles just let down in the boat, one silled with boiling pitch, and the other with rosin, tallow, oil, and such stuff as the shipwrights use: the carpenter's man had a great iron laddle with which he used to supply the workmen with hot stuff, and as two of the enemies entered the boat

Gg

where

where the fellow stood, he saluted them with a full laddle of the hot boiling liquor, which, the poor creatures being half naked, made them roar out, and jump into the fea. Well done, jack, fays the carpenter give them the other dose; and so stepping forward himself, takes a mop, and dipping it into the pitch pot, he and his man so plentifully flung is among them as their rooms. plentifully flung it among them, as that none efcaped being scalded : upon which they all made the bell of their way, crying and how-ling in such a frightful manner, that in all my adventures I never heard the like. And indeed never was I better pleased with any conquest than I was with this, there being to fittle bloo fled, and having an aversion to killing such savage wretches (more than was necessary), as knowing they came on errands, which their laws and cultoms made them think were just and equitable. By this time all things being in order, and the thip fwimming, they found their miltake, so they did not venture a second attack. Thus ended our merry fight; and having gotten some rice, bread, roots, and fixteen good hogs on board the day before, we let fail, not daring to go into the bay of Tonquin, but steered N. E. towards the the Manillas, or as though we would go to the Manillas, or Philippine illands, for fear of meeting with any European thips. When we anchored at the ille Formola, the inhabitants not only courteoully supplied us with provisions and fresh water, but dealt very, fairly and honest y with us in their bargains and agreements. From this place we steered north, keeping still off the coast

coast of China, till we were beyond all its ports where European ships usually come; and at length-being come to the latitude of thirty degrees, we resolved to put into the first trading port we should come at; and standing for the shore, a boat came off two leagues to us, with an old Portuguese pilot on board, who offered his service; we very gladly accepted him, and sent the boat back again. And now having the old man on board, I talked to him of going to Nanquin; the most northward part of the coast of China. What will you do there? faid he, smiling. I told !im we would fell our cargo, and purchase calicoes, raw and wrought siks, tea, &c. and so return the same way back. O, said he, you had better put in at Macao, where you may buy China wares as cheap as at Nanquin, and fell your opium at a greater advance. But, faid I, we are gentlement as well as merchants, and design to see the great city of Pekin, and the magnificent court of the monarch of China. Why then, said he, you should go to Ningpo, where there is a navigable river that goes through the heart of that vast empire, two hundred and seventy leagues from the sea, which crosses all the rivers, passes consider-able hills, by the help of the sluices and gates, and goes even up to the city of Pekin. You may go to Nanquin, if you please, and travel to Pekin, and there is a Dutch ship just before bound that way. At the name of a Dutch or English ship, I was struck with confusion; they being as great a terror to me in this vessel, as an Algerine man of war is to them in the Mediterranean. The Gg 2

The old man finding me troubled Sin said he, I hope the Dutch are not now at war with your nation No, said I, but God knows what liberty they may take when out of the reach of the law. Why, says he, what occasion is there for peaceable merchants to fear? For, believe me, they never meddle with any but PI-RATES.

At the mentioning of the word pirates, my countenance turned to that of scarlet; nor was it possible for me to conceal it from the old pilot; who taking notice of it, Sir, said he take awhat course you please, I'll do you all the service I can. Seignior, said I, I am a little concerned at your mentioning pirates; I hope there are none such in these seas, because you see in what a weak condition we are to defend ourselves. O, Sir, said he, if that's all, don't be concerned. I don't remember one in these seas these sisteen in the bay of Siam, but she is gone to the southward; neither was she built for a privateer, but was run away with by a reprobate captain, and some of his men, the right captain having been murdered by the Malayans.

What! said I, (as though ignorant of what had happened), did they kill the captain? No, said he it is generally thought the Malayans, murdered him? but prebaps they might procure them to do it, and therefore they justly deserve hanging. The rogues were lately discovered in the bay of Siam, in the river of Cambadia, by some Dutchmen who belonged to the ship, and had much ado to escape

the five boats that purfued them, but they have all given such an exact description of the ship, that wherever they find her, they will be sure to know her; and they have solemnly swore to give no quarter to the captain or the feamen, but hang them every one up at the yard-arm, without any formal business of bringing them to a court of judicature.

Being sensible, that, having the old man on

board, he was incapable of doing me any mischief, Well, Seignior, faid I, it is for this very reason I would have you earry us to Nanquin, where nei-ther English nor Dutch ships come: and I must tell you their captains are a parcel of rash, proud, infolent rascals, that neither know what belongs to justice; nor how to behave themselves as the laws of God or nature direct; fellows that would prove murderers to punish robbers, and take upon them to adjudge innocent men to death, without any proof to prove them gullty; but perhaps I may live to call them to an account for it, in a place where they may be taught how jultice is to be executed. And fo I to'd him all the flory of buying the ship, and how we were saved by the means of two men; that the murder of the captain by the Malayans, as also the running away with the ship I believed to be true; but that we who bought it, were turned pirates, was a mere fiction, to cover their cowardice and foolish behaviour when they attacked us, and the blood of these men we killed in our own just defence, lay at their door, who fent to attack us by furprise.

Sir, faid the old man amazed, you have taken the right course to steer to the north; and, if I might ad-

Gg 3

vife'

visa you. I record bone you sell your ship in China. and buy or build another in that country; and I'll procure people to buy the one and fell the other. Well, Seignior, faid I, if I fell the thip in this manner, I may bring some innocent persons into the same danger as I have gone through, perhaps worse, even death itself, whereby I should be as gully of their murder as villanous executioners. That weed not trouble you, says the old man; I'll find a way to prevent that; for these commanders you talk of, I know very well, and I will inform them rightly of the matter, as you have related, and I am persuaded they will not only believe me but all more eautiously fan the future And will you deliver one message from me to show I Wes said he if you will give it under your band, that I may prove it is not of my even production. Hereupon I wrote a large account of their attacking me in their longboat, the presended reason and the unjust design of it; that they had done what shey might be ashamed of. and could not answer at any wibund in England. But this letter was writin vain. Providence ordered things another way. We failed directly for Nanquin, and, in about thirteen days ful, came to an anchor to the fouth-west point of the great gulf of that place, where we learned that two Disch thips were gone the length before its, and shar we should certainly fall into shoir hands. We were all at a great dols in shis exigency, and would there gladly have been on hore almost any where; but our old pilot told me, that if I would shill to the feuthward about two and fonty leagues, there was a little port palled Quinchange, whose no Rury pean

pean thips over came, and where we might confider what was further to be done. Accordingly we weighed anchor the next day, calling only twice on hove by the way to get fresh dater. The country-people very courteously sold us roots, tea, rice, fowls, and other provisions. After five days fail we came to the port and landed with unspeakble joy. We refolded to dispose of ourselves and offects in any other way possible, than enter on board that ill-fated wessel more; for no state can be more miferable than a continued fear, which is a life of death, a confounder of our understandings, that fer the imagination at work to form a thouland hightful things that may never happen. And we feace dept one night, without dreaming of halters. yard arms, or gibbers; of fighting, being taken, and being killed; nay, fo violent were our apprehensione that we would broife our hands and heads against the sides of the cabin, as though adually engaged. The story of the Dutch cruelty at Amboyna often same into our thoughts when awaken and for my part, I thought thy condition very hand that, after to many difficulties and facts fignal delivermees, I should be hanged in my old age, though inageent of any crime that deferved fuch punishments but their religion would feen to prefent to me, as though the woice of it had fait, Confider, O nim bwhat fins you have been formerly guilty of, which now thou are called to all account for, to explace with thy blood! And as to the innocence, what, are thou more innodent than thy bleffed Redecree Jelus Christ, who fuffered for thy offences and to whose providence you aught to submit let and o what

what will happen? After this natural courage would inspire me to relift to the last drop of blood, and fooner dye than fuffer myfelf to be raken by boorish rascally Dutchmen, who had arts to terment be-

But now, thank kind Heaven, being alhore, our old pilot procured us a lodging and a warehouse for our goods; it was a little hut, with a large warehouse joining to it, all built with canes, and palifadoed round with large ones, to keep out pilfering theires, which are very numerous in that country. The magistrates allowed us a little guard during the night, and we employed a fentinel with a kind of a hatbert for three pence a-day. The fair or mart, we found, had been over for fome time; however, there remained in the river four Junks and two Japan ships, the merchants of the latter being on shore. In the first place, our old pilot brought us acquainted with the milliomary Roman priefts, who were conversing the people to Christianity: two of them were referved, rigid, and authore, applying themselves to the works hey came about with great earnestness; but the third, who was a Frenchman, called father Simon, was of a freer convertation, not feemingly fo ferious and grave, yet no worde Christian than the other two, one of whom was a Portuguele, and the other a Genocle. Father Simon, it feems, was appointed to go to Pekin, the royal feat of the emperor of the Chinese; and he only waited for another prieft, who was ordered from Macao to acompany him. We never mer together but he that

that journey: Sir feid he I will thew you the glorious things of this mighty empire, and a city, the city of Pakin, far exceeding London & Paris, put them, both together. One day in particular, being a dinner with him, I thewed fome inclination to go; which made him prefs the more upon me and my partner, to gain our perfect consent, But father, Simon, faid my partner, what satisfaction can you have in our company, whom you esteem as hereticks, and consequently objects not worthy your regards. Oh! said he, you may be as good Catholics in time as those I hope to convert to our religion. And so those I hope to convert to our rengion. And, fo, faid I, we shall have you preaching to us all the way, instead of pleasing us with a description of the country. Sir, faid he, however our religion may be vilified by some people, it is very certain it neither divests us of good manners or Christian charity, and as we are gentlemen, as such we may converse together, without making one another uneafy.

But we shall leave him a while, to consider our thip and the merchandise which we had to dispose of. There was but very little trade in the place where we were; and I was once resolved to venture to fail to the river Kilaun, and so to the city of Nanquin; but Providence ordered it otherwise, by our old pilot's bringing a Japan merchant to us to fee what goods we had. He immediately bought our opium, for which he gave us a very good price in gold by weight, some wedges of which were about ten or eleven ounces. It came into my head, that perhaps he might buy the ship too; and I ordered his interpreter to propole it to him. He faid nothing then; but shrunk up his shoulders:

socodar

ers; yet in a few days after he came accompanied by a missionary priest, who was his interpreter, with this propolal, That as he had bought a great quantity of our goods, he had not money enough to buy our ship; but if I pleased he would bire her, with all my men, to go to Japan, and from thence with another loading to the Philipine islands, the freight of both which he would very willingly pay to as before; and at their return to Japan would buy the ship.

Upon this we asked the captain and his men,

if they were willing to go to Japan; to which they unanimously agreed. While this was in agitation, the young man my nephew left to at-tend me, told me, That as I did not care to accept this prospect of advantage, he would manage it for me as I pleased, and render me a faithful account of his success, which should be wholly mine. Indeed I was very unwilling to part with him; but considering it might be for the young man's good, I discoursed my partner about it, who of his own generosity gave him his share of the vessel, so that I could do no otherwise than give him mine; but however we let him have but the property of half of it, and preserved a power, that when we met in England, if he had obtained fuccess, he should account to us for one half of the profits of the ships freight, and the other should be his own. Thus having taken a writing under his hand, away he failed to Japan, where the merchant dealt very honefly by him, got him a licence to come on thore, tent him loaded to the Philippines with a Japanese supercargo, from whence

whence he came back again loaded with European goods, cloves and other spiceties. By this voyage he cleared a considerable sum of money, which determined him to sell his ship, but to trade on his own account: so he returned to the Manillas, where getting acquaintance, he made his ship free, was hired by the governor privately to go to Acapulco in America, on the Mexican coast, with a licence to travel to the great city of Mexico. This traffic turned out greatly to account, and my friend finding means to get to Jamaica, returned nine years after exceeding rich into England.

nine years after exceeding rich into England.

In parting with the ship, it comes in course to consider of those men who had saved our lives when in the river of Cambodia: and though, by the way, they were a couple of rogues, who thought to turn pirates theinselves, yet we paid them what they had before demanded, and gave each of them a small sum of money making the Englishman a gunner, and the Dutchman a boatswain, with which they were very well contented.

We were now above 1000 leagues farther from home, than when at Bengal. All the comfort we could expect, was that their being another fair to be kept in a month's time, we might not only purchase all forts of that country's manufactures, but very possibly find some Chinese junks, or vessels from Tonquin, to be sold, which would carry us and our goods heretoever we pleased. Upon those hopes, we resolved to continue; and to divert ourselves, we rook several little journeys in the county. About ten days

after we parted with our ship, we travelled to see the city of Nanquin. This city lies in latitude 30 deg. north of the line: it is regularly built, and the streets are exactly straight, and cross one another, in direct lines, which sets it out to the greatest advantage. At our return we found the priest was come from Macao that was to accompany father Simon to Pekin. That father earnestly solicited me to accompany him, and I referred him to my partner. In short, we both agreed, and prepared accordingly; and we were so lucky as to have liberty to travel among the retinue of one of their Mandarins, who is a principal magistrate; and much reverenced by the people.

We were five and twenty days travelling through this miferable country, infinitely populous, but as indifferently cultivated; and yet their pride is infinitely greater than their poverty, infomuch that the priests themseves derided them. As we passed by the house of one of their county-gentlemen, two leagues off of Nanquin, we had the honour, forsooth, to ride with the Chinese squire about two miles. Never was Don Quixote so exactly imitated, never such a compound of pomp and po-

verry feen before!

His habit, made of calicoe, was dirty, greafy, and very proper for a Merry Andrew or Scaramouch, with all its tawdry trappings, as hanging fleeves, taffels, &c. though torn and rent in almost every part: his vest underneath it was no less dirty, but more greafy, resembling the most exquisite floven, or greafy butcher. His horse (worse

(worse than Rosinante, or the famous steed of doughty Hudibras) was a poor, starved, decrepit thing, that would not fell for thirty shillings in England: and yet this piece of worshipful pomp was attended with ten or twelve flaves, who guarded their master to his countryseat. We stopped at a little village for refreshment; and when we came by the country feat of this great man, we found him fitting under a tree before his door, eating a mess of boiled rice, with a great piece of garlic in the middle, and a bag filled with green pepper by him, and another plant like ginger, together with a piece of lean mutton in it; this was his Worship's repast: but pray observe the state of the fool! two women slaves brought him his food; which being laid before him, two others appeared to perform their respective offices; one fed him with a spoon, while the other scraped off what fell upon his beard and taffety-veit, and gave it to a particular favorite to eat. And thus we left the wretch pleased with the conceit of our admiring his magnificence, which rather merited our fcorn and detestation.

At length we arrived at the great city of Pekin, accompanied by two servants, and the old Portuguese pilot, whose charges we bore, and who served us as an interpreter by the way. We had searce been a week at Pekin, but he comes laughing to us, Ab! Seignior Inglise, said he, me something tell you make your heart glad, but make me sorry; for you bring me here 25 days journey, and now you leave me go back alone: and which way shall I make my port after, without de ship, without de horse, without pecune; so he called money H h

in his broken Latin. He then informed me that there was a great caravan of Muscovite and Polish merchants in the city, who were preparing to set out to Muscovy by land within six weeks; and that he was certain we would take this apportunity, and consequently that he must go home by himself. Inded this news infinitely surprised and pleased me. Are you certain of this? said I, Tes Sir, said he, me sure it's true. And so he told me, that having met an old acquaintance of his, an Armenian, in the street; who was among them, and who had come from Astracan, with a defign to go to Tonquin, but for certain reasons having altered his resolution, he was now resolved to go with the caravan, and to return by the river Wo ga to Astracan. Well, Seignior, said I, don't be disconsented about your returning alone; and if by this means I can find a passage to England, it will be your own fault if you return to Macoa at all. And so consulting with my partner what was best to be done, he referred it to me as I pleased, having our affairs so well settled at Bengal, that if we could convert the good voyage we had made in China filks, wrought raw, he would be glad to go to England, and so return to Bengal in the company's ships. Thus resolved, we agreed, that if our pilot would go with us, we would bear his charges either to Moscow or England; and to give him in a present the fum of 170 pounds Sterling. Hereupon we called him in, and told him the cause of his complaint should be removed, if he wou'd accompany us with the caravan; and therefore we defired to know his mind. At this he shook his head, Great long journey,

ney, said he, me no pecune, carry me to Moscow, or keep me there. But we soon put him out of that concern, by making him sensible of what we would give him here to lay out to the best advantage; and as for his charges, we would set him safe on shore, God willing, either in Muscovy or England, as he pleased, at our own charge, except the carriage of his goods. At this proposal he was like a man transported, telling us, he would go with us all the world over; and we made preparations for our journey; but it was near four months before all the merchants were ready.

In the mean time, my partner and the pilot went express to the port where we first put in, to dispose of what goods had been left there, while I accompanied a Chinese merchant, who was going to Nam quin, and there bought 29 pieces of damask, with about 300 more of other fine filks; and by the time my partner returned to Pekin, I had them all carried thither: our cargo in filks amounted to 4500 l. Sterling, which, together with tea, fine calicoes, nutmegs, and cloves, loaded 18 camels for our share, besides what we rode upon, with two or three spare horses, and two more loaden with provisions: the company was now very great, making about 400 horse, and above 120 men, well armed and provided. We were of feveral nations, among whom were five Scors merchants inhabiting in Moscow, and well experienced in trade.

We set out from Pekin the beginning of February our style; and in two days more, we passed through the gate of the great China wall, which was erected as a fortification against the Tartars, be-

H h 2.

ing

ing 100 English miles long. We then entered a country not near fo populous, chiefly under the power of plundering Tartars, feveral companies of whom we perceived riding on poor starved horses, contemptible as themselves, without order or discipline. One time our leader for the day gave us leave to go a-hunting. But what do you think we hunted? only a parcel of sheep, which inded exceeded any in the world for wildness and swiftness; but while we were pursuing this game, it was our chance to meet with about forty Tartars, who no sooner perceived us, but one of them blew a horn, at the found of which there foon appeared a troop of forty or fifty more, at about a mile's diftance. Hereupon one of the Scots merchants (who knew their ways) ordered us to advance towards them, and attack them immediately. As we advanced, they let fly a volley of arrows, which happpily fell a little short of us: this made us halt a little, to return the compliment with bullets; and then being led up by the bold Scot, we fired our pistols in their faces, and drew out our swords; but there was no occasion; for they flew like timerous sheep, and only three of them remained, beckoning to the rest to come back. But our brave commander gallops up to them by himself, that one dead, knocks another off his horse, while the third ran away. and thus ended our battle with the Tartars.

We travelled a month more through the emperor of China's dominions; and at length coming to one of their towns about a day and a half's journey from the city of Naum, I wanted to buy a ca-

mel. The person I spoke to would have brought me one, but, like a fool, I must go along with him, about two miles from the village. My old pilot and I walked on foot, forfooth, for fome variety, when coming to the place where the camels were kept as in a park guarded by Chinese soldiers, we there agreed and bought one, which the Chinese man that same with me led along the road. But we had not gone far, before we were attacked: by five Tartars, mounted on horseback, two of whom feized the man, took the camel from him, and rode away, while the other three approached. us, the first of whom suddenly seized me as I was drawing my fword, the fecond knocked me down; but my old trusty Portuguese, taking a pistol out. of his pocket, which I knew nothing of, and coming up to the fellow that struck me, with one hand pulled him off his horse, and then shot him deadupon the spot; then taking his scymatar, he struck at the man that stopt us, but missing him, cut off one of his horse's ears, the pain of which made him throw his rider to the ground: The poor Chinele, who had led the camel, feeing the Tartar down, runs to him, and fiezing upon his pole-axe, wrenched it from his hands, and knocked But there was another Tartar to his brains out. deal with, who feeming neither inclined to fight nor to fly, and my old man having begun to charge his piftol, the very fight of it struck such a terror. into the wretch, that away he scoured, leaving my, old pilot, rather my champion and defender, an abfolute victory.

By this time being awakened from my trance, I H. h. 2. began began to open my eyes, wondering where I was, having quite forgot all that passed; but my senses returning, and feeling a great pain in my head, and feeing the blood run over my cloaths, I instantly jumped upon my feet, and grasped my sword in my hand, with a resolution to take revenge; but no enemies now remained, except the dead Tartar, with his horse standing by him. The old man feeing me recovered, whom he thought flain, ran towards me, and embraced me with the greatest tenderness, at the same time examining into my wound, which was far from being mortal; when we returned to the village, the man demanded payment for his camel, which I refusing, we brought the cause before a Chinese judge, who acted with great impartiality: having heard both sides, he asked the Chinese man that went with me, whose servant he was? Sir, faid he, I am no body's, but went with the stranger, at his request: why then, faid the judge, you were the stranger's servant for the time, and the camel being delivered to his fervant, it is the same as though delivered to himself and accordingly he must pay for it. Indeed the case was so fairly stated, that I had nothing to object to it; fo having paid for that I was robbed of, I sent for another, but did not go myself to fetch it, as I had enough of that sport before. To main

The city of Naum is a frontier of the Chinese empire, so fortified, as some will tell you, that millions of Tartars cannot batter down their walls; by which certainly one might think one of our cannons would do more execution than all their

legions.

When we were within a day's march of that city, we had information that the governor had fent messengers to every part of the road, to inform the travellers and caravans to halt, till a guard was sent to protect them from the numerous bodies of Tartars that lately appeared about the city. This news put us into great consternation; but obeying the orders, we stopt, and two days after, there came two hundred soldiers from a garrison of the Chinese, and three hundred more from Naum: thus guarded, both in the front and rear, with our own men on the slanks, we boldly advanced, thinking we were able to combat with ten

thousand Mogul Tartars, if they appeared.

Early next morning, in our march from a little well-situated town called Changu, after having paffed a river, and entered upon a defert of about 15 or 16 miles over, we foon beheld, by a cloud of dust that was raised, that the enemy was approaching. This much dispirited the Chinese. My old pilot took notice of it, and called out, Seignor Inglese, those fellows must be encouraged, or they will ruin us all; and I am afraid, if the Tartars attack us, they will all run away. Why, Seignor, faid I, what shall be done in this case? Done, says he, why, let fifty of our men advance, and flank them on each wing. I know the fellows will fight well enough in company. We accordingly took his advice, and marched fifty to the right wing, and the same number to the left, and with the rest made a line of reserve, leaving the last two hundred men to guard the camels, or to affift us as occasion required.

Thus

Thus prepared, a party of the enemy came forward, viewing our posture, and traversing the ground on the front of our line. Hereupon we ordered the two wings to move on, and give them a salute with their shot; which accordingly was done. This put a stop to their proceedings; for immediately wheeling off to their left, they all marched away, and we saw no more of them. They had undoubtedly given an account to their companions of what reception they might expect, which made them so easily give over their enterprise.

When we came to the city of Naum, we returned the governor hearty thanks, and dispersed a hundred crowns among the soldiers that guarded us. We rested there one day, and then proceeded on our travels, passing several great rivers and deferts; and on the 13th of April, we came to the frontiers of Muscovy, the first town of which was

called Argun.

CATATA

This happy occasion, as I thought, of coming into a Christian country, made me congratulate the Scots merchant upon it; he smiled at that, telling me not to rejoice too soon; for, said he, except the Russian soldiers in garrison, and a few inhabitants of the cities upon the road, all the rest of this country, for above a thousand miles, is inhabited by the most ignorant and barbarous Pagans.

We advanced from the river Arguna by moderate journeys, and found convenient garrifons on the road, filled with Christian soldiers, for the security of commerce, and for the convenient lodging of travellers; but the inhabitants of the coun-

try were mere Pagans, worshipping the fun, moon, and stars. We particularly observed this idolatry near the river Arguna, at a city inhabited by Tartars and Russians, called Nerifinkey, Being carious to fee their way of living, while the caravan continued to rest themselves in that city, I went to one of their villages, where there was to be one of their folemn facrifices. There I beheld, upon the stump of an old tree, an idol of wood, more ugly than the representation of the devil himself; its head resembling no living creature; its ears were as big and as high as goats horns, a crooked nofe, four-cornered mouth, and horrible teeth: it was clothed in sheeps skins, had a great Tartar bonnet, with two horns growing through it, and was eight foot high, without feet, legs, or proportion. Before this idol there lay 16 or 17 people, who brought their offerings, and were making their prayers, while at a distance stood three men, and one bullock, as victims to this ugly monster.

Such stupendous sacrilege as this, in robbing the true God of his honour, filled me with the greatest astonishment and reflection; which soon turning to rage and sury, I rode up to the image, and cut in pieces the bonnet that was upon his head with my sword, so that it hung down by one of the horns, while one of my men that was with me, pulled at it by his sheeps skin garment. Immediately an hideous howling and outcry ran through the village, and two or three hundred people coming about our ears, we were obliged to sly for it.

But I had not done with the monster; for the

caravan

caravan being to test three nights in the town, I to'd the Scots merchant what I had feen, and that I was refolved to take four or five men well armed with me, in order to destroy the idol, and shew the people how little reason they had to trust in a god, who cou d not save himself. At first he laughed at me, representing the danger of it, and when it was destroyed, what time had we to preach to them better things, whose zeal and ignorance was in the highest degree, and both unparal elled? that if I should be taken by them, I should be ferved as a poor ruffian, who contemned their worship; that is, to be stripped naked, and tied to the top of the idol, there shot at with arrows till my body was full of them, and then burnt as a sacrifice to the monster: but, Sir, said he, fince your zeal carries you so far, rather than you should be alone, I will accompany you, and bring a stout fellow equal to yourself, if you will assist us in this design: and accordingly he brought one Captain Richardson, who hearing the story, readily consented; but my partner declined it, being altogether out of his way: and so we three, and my man-tervant, resolved to execute this exploit about midnight; but upon second thoughts we described it to the next night, by reason that the carevin being to go from thence the next morning, we should be out of the governor's power. The better to effectuate my design, I procured a Tartar's sheep-skin robe, a bonnet, with bow and arrows, and every one of us got the like habits. The first night we spent in mixing combustible matter with aqua-vitæ, gunpowder, &c. having

having a good quantity of tar in a little pot; next night we came up to the idol about eleven o'clock, the moon being up. We found none guarding it; but we perceived a light in the house, where we had seen the priests before, One of our men was for firing the hut, an-other for killing the people, and a third for making them prisoners, while the idol was deflroyed. We agreed to the latter; fo knocking at the door, we feized the first that opened it, and stopping his mouth, and tying his feet, we left him. We served the other two in the like manner; and then the Scots merchant fet fire to the composition, which frightened them so much, that we brought them all away prisoners to their wooden god. There we fell to work with him, daubing him all over with tar, mixed with tallow and brimstone, stopping his eyes, ears, and mouth, full of gunpowder, with a great piece of wild fire in his bonnet, and environed it with dry forage. All this being done, we unloofed and unjagged the prisoners and set the idol on fire, which the gunpowder blowing up, the shape of it was deformed, rent, and split, which the forage atterly confumed; for we stayed to fee its destruction, lest the ignorant idolatrous people should have thrown themselves into the slame. And thus we came away undiscovered, in the morning appearing as bufy among our fellow travellers, as nobody could have suspected any other, but that we had been in our beds all Next .

MIVE

Next morning we set out, and had got but a small distance from the city, when there came a multitude of the people of the country to the gates of the city, demanding satisfaction of the Russian governor, for insulting their priests, and burning their great Cham Chi-Thaungu, who dwelt in the sun, and that no mortal would violate his image, but some Christian miscreants; and being already no less than thirty thousand strong, they denounced war against him and all his Christians.

The governor affured them he was ignorant of the matter, and that none of his garrison had been abroad; that indeed there was a caravan that went away that morning, and that he would fend after them to inquire into it, and whoever were the offenders, should be delivered into their hands. This fatisfied them for the present; but the governor sent to inform us, that if any of us had done it, we should make all the haste away possible, while he kept them in play as long as he could. Upon this we marched two days and two nights, stopping but very little, till at last we arrived at a village called Plothus, and hasted to Jarawena, another of the Czar's colonies. On the third day having entered the defert, and paffed the lake called Shaks-Ofer, we beheld a numerous body of horse on the other side of it to the north, who supposed we had passed on that side of the lake; but having either found their mistake, or being certainly informed of the way we took, they came upon us towards the dulk of the evening, just as we had pirched our camp between two little but very thick woods, with

a little river running before our front, and some felled trees with which we had covered our rear; a precaution we always took, and which we had

just finished, when the enemy came up.

They did not fall on us immediately, but fent three messengers, demanding the men who had infulted their priests, and burnt their god Cham Chi-Thaungu, that they might be burnt with fire; that if this was complied with, they would peaceably depart; but if not, they would destroy one and all of us. Our men stared at one another on receipt of this meffage; but Nobody was the word, as indeed no body knew it, but he who did it. Upon which the leader of the caravan returned for answer, That they were peaceable merchants, who meddled with none of their priests and gods; and therefore defired them not to disturb us, and put us to the necessity of defending ourselves. But fo far was this from fatisfying them, that the next morning, coming to our right, they let fly a volley of arrows amongst us, which happily did not hurt any, because we sheltered ourselves behind our baggage. We expected however to come to a closer engagement; but were happily faved by a cunning fellow, a Coffack, who obtaining leave of the leader to go out, mounts his horse, rides directly from our rear, and taking a circuit, comes. up to the Tartars, as though he had been fent express, and tells them a formal story, that the wretches who had burnt the Cham Chi-Thaungu, were gone to Siheilka, with a resolution to burn the god Shal-Har, belonging to the Tongueses. Upon which, believing this cunning Tartar, who was

was tervant to our Muscovites, away they drove to Siheilka, and in less than three hours were out of our fight, nor did we ever hear of them more.

When we came to the city of Jarawena, we rested five days, and then entered into a frightful defert, which held us twenty-three days march, infelted with feveral small companies of robbers, or Mogul Tartars, who never had the courage to attack us. After we had passed over this desert; we found feveral garrisons to defend our caravans from the violence of the Tartars. In particular the governor of Adinskoy offered as a guard of fifty men to the next station, if we apprehended any danger. The people here retained the same paganism and barbarity, only they were not so dangerous, being conquered by the Muscovites. The cloathing, both of men and women, is of the skins of beasts, living under the ground in vaults and caves, which have a communication with one another. They have idols almost in every family; besides, they adore the sun and stars, water and fnow; and the least uncommon thing that happens in the elements, alarms them as much as thunder and lightning does the unbelieving lews.

Nothing remarkable occurred in our march through this country. When we had got through the defert, after two days farther travel, we come to Janezay, a Muscovite city, on the great river so called, which, we were told, parted Europe and Asia. The inhabitants here were very little better, though intermixed with the Muscovites; but the wonder will cease, when I inform

my reader of what was observed to me, that the Czar rather converts the Tartars with soldiers than clergymen, and is more proud to make them faith-

ful subjects, than good Christians.

From this city to the river Oby, we travelled over a pleasant, fruitful, but very uncultivated country, for want of good management and peo-ple, and those few are mostly Pagans. This is the place where the Muscovice criminals are banished to, if they are not put to death. The next city we came to, was the capital city of Siberia, called Tobolski, when, having been almost seven months on our journey, and winter drawing on apace, my partner and I consulted about our particular affairs, in what manner we should dispose of ourselves. We had been told of fledges, and rein-deer to carry us over the fnow in the winter feafon, the fnow being frozen fo hard, that the fledges can run upon the furface without any danger of going down. As I was bound to England, I now proposed either to go with the caravan to Jeroslaw, from thence west to Narva, and the gulf of Finland, and fo by land or fea to Denmark; or elfe I must leave the caravan at a little town on the Dwina, and fo to Archangel, where I was certain of shipping either to England, Holland, or Hamburgh. One night I happened to get into the company of an illustrious but banished prince whose company and virtues were fuch as made me propose to him a method how he might obtain his liberty. My dear friend, said he, as I am here bappily free from my miserable greatness, with all its attendants of pride, ambition, avarice, and Ii 2 luxuny:

buxury: if I should escape from this place, those pernicious seeds may again revive, to my lasting disquietude; therefore let me remain in a blessed confinement, for I am but flesh, a mere man, with passions and affections as such; O be not my friend and tempter too! Struck dumb with surprise, I ftood filent a while, nor was he in less disorder; by which perceiving he wanted to give vent to his mind I defired him to confider of it and so withdrew. But about two hours after, he came to my apartment: Dear friend, said he, though I cannot confent to accompany you, I shall have this satisfaction in parting, that you leave me an bonest man still; but as a testimony of my affection to you, be pleased to accept this present of sables.

In return for his compliment, I sent my servant

pext morning to his Lordship, with a small present of tea, two pieces of China damask, and four little wedges of gold: but he only accepted the tea, one piece of damask, and a piece of gold, for the curiofity of the Japan stamp that was upon it. long after, he fent for me, and told me, That what he had refused himself, he hoped upon his account I would grant to another, whom he should name: In fhort, it was his only fon, who was about 200 miles distance from him, on the other fide of the Oby, whom he faid he would fend for, I gave my consent. This I foon complied with; upon which he fent his fervant next day for his fon, who returned in twenty days time, bringing feven horses loaded with valuable furs. At night the young lord was conducted incognito into our apartment, where his father presented him to me. We

ling, We then concerted the best ways for travely of and after having bought a considerable quantit h I sables, black fox-skins, fine ermines, &c. (which fold at Archangel at a good price), we fet out from this city the beginning of June, making a small caravan, being about thirty-two horses and camels, of which I represented the head. My young lord had with him a very faithful Siberian fervant, well acquainted with the roads: we shunned the principal towns and cities, as Tumen, Soli-Kamofkoi, and several others, by reason of their strictness in examining travellers, lest any of the banished persons of distinction should escape. Having passed the river Kama, we came to a city on the European fide, called Soloy-Kamoskoi, where we found the people mostly Pagans as before. We then passed a desert of about two hundred miles over; but in other places, it is near feven hundred. In passing this wild place, we were befer by a troop of men on horseback, and about five and forty men armed with bows and arrows. At first they looked earnestly on us, and then placed themselves in our way. We were about fixteen men, and drew up a little line before our camels. My young lord fent out his Siberian fervant to know who they were; but when he approached them, he neither knew a word they faid, nor would they admit him to come near them at his peril, but prepared to shoot him. At his return he told us, he believed them to be Calmuck Tartars, and that he thought there were more of them upon the defert. This was but a fmall comfort to us; yet seeing a little grove about a quar-Ii 3 ter

per of a mile's distance, we moved to it, by the old Portuguese pilot's advice, without meeting with any opposition. Here we found a marshy piece of ground, and a spring of water running into a little brook on one side, which joined another like it a little farther off, and these two formed the head of the river called Writika. As foon as we arrived, we went to work, cutting down great arms off the rees, and laying them hanging (not quite cut off) from one tree to another. In this fituation we waited the motions of the enemy, without perceiving any advancement they made towards us. About two hours before night, being joined by fome others, in all about fourscore horse, among whom we fancied were some women, they came upon us with great fury. We fired without ball, calling to them in the Russian tongue to know their business; but they, either not knowing, or feeming not understand us, came directly to the wood-fide, not confidering that we were fo fortified, as that they could not break in. Our old pilot the Portuguese proved both our captain and engineer, and defired us not to fire, till they came within pistol-shot; and when he gave the word of command, then to take the furest aim : but he did not bid us give fire, till they were within two pikes length of us, and then we killed fourteen of them, wounded several, as also their heries, having every one of us loaded our pieces with two or three bullets at least. So much were they furprised at our undauntedness, that they retired about a hundred roods from us. In the mean while we loaded our pieces again, and fallying out:

out, secured four or five of their horses, whose riders we found were killed, and perceived them to be Tartars. About an hour after, they made another attempt, to see where they might break in; but finding us ready to receive them, they retired.

All that night we wrought hard, in strengthening our fituation, and barricading the entrances into the woods; but when daylight came, we had a very unwelcome discovery; for the enemy being encouraged by their assistance, had set up eleven or twelve tents in form of a camp, about three quarters of a mile from us. I must confess, I was never more concerned in my life, giving myfelf and all that I had over for loft. And my partner declared, that as the loss of his goods would be his ruin, before they should be taken from him he would fight to the last drop of his blood. As we could not pretend to force our way, we had recourse to a stratagem; we kindled a fire, which burnt all night; and was no sooner dark, but we pursued our journey towards the pole, or north star, and travelling all night, by fix o'clock in the morning we came to a Ruffian village, called Kertza, and from thence came to a large town named Ozonova, where we heard that several troops of Calmuck Tartars had been abroad upon the defert, but that we were past all danger. In five days after we came to Veuslima, upon the river Witzedga; from thence we came to Lawrenskoy, on the third of July, where providing ourselves with two luggage-boats, and a convenient bark, we embarked the seventh, and arrived at Archangel the eighteenth, after a year five months, and three days journey, including the eight months

and odd days at Toboliki. We came from Archangel the twentieth of August in the same year, and arrived at Hambough the thirtieth of September. Here my partner and I made a very good fale of our goods, both those of China and Siebria; when dividing our effects, my share came to 34751. 178. 3d. after all the losses we had fustained, and charges we had been at. Here the young lord took his leave of me, in order to go to the court of Vienna, not only to teek protection, but to correspond with his father's friends. After we had staid four months in Hamburgh, I went from thence over land to the Hague, where embarking in the packet, I arrived in London the tenth of January 1705, after ten years and nine month's absence from England.

Robinson Crusoe's vision of the Angelic World.

Chap. I. Of SOLITUDE.

However solitude is looked upon as a restraint to the pleasures of the world, in company and conversation, yet it is a happy state of exemption from a sea of trouble; an inundation of vanity and vexation, of consustion and disappointment. While we enjoy ourselves, neither the joy nor sorrow of other men affect us: we are then at liberty, with the voice of our soul, to speak to God. By this we shun such frequent trivial discourse, as even becomes an obstruction to virtue:

the Broken the cight months

and how often do we find, that we had reason to wish we had not been in company, or said nothing when we were there? for either we offend God by the impiety of our discourse, or lay ourselves open to the violence of defigning people by our unguarded expressions; and frequently feel the coldness and treachery of pretended friends, when once involved in trouble and affliction; of fuch unfaithful intimates (I should fay enemies) who rather by false innuendos would accumulate miferies upon us, than honestly assist us when suffering under the hard hand of adversity. But in a state of solitude when our tongues cannot be heard, except by the great Majesty of heaven, how happy are we, in the blessed enjoyment of conversing with our Maker! It is then we make him our friend, which fets us above the envy and contempt of wicked men. When a man converses with himself, he is sure that he does not converse with an enemy. Our retreat should be to good company, and good books. I mean not by folitude, that a man should retire into a cell, a defert, or a monastery; which would be altogether an useless and unprofitable restraint: for as men are formed for fociety, and have an absolute necessity and dependence upon one another; so there is a retirement of the foul, with which it converses in heaven, even in the midst of men; and indeed no man is more fit to speak freely, than he who can, without any violence to himself, refrain his tongue, or keep filence altogether. As to religion, it is by this the foul gets acquainted with the hidden mysteries of the holy writings; here she finds those those sloods of tears, in which good men wash themselves day and night, and only makes a visit to God, and his holy angels. In this conversation the truest peace and most solid joy are to be sound; it is a continual feast of contentment on earth, and the means of attaining everlasting happiness in heaven.

Chap. II. Of HONEST

Henesty is a virtue beloved by good men, and pretended to by all persons. In this there are feveral degrees: to pay every man his own, is the common law of honesty; but to do good to all mankind, is the chancery-law of honesty. and this chancery-court is in every man's breast, where his conscience is a lord chancellor. Hence it is, that a miser, though he pays every body their own, cannot be an honest man, when he does not discharge the good offices that are incumbent on a friendly, kind, and generous person: for, saiththe prophet Isaiah, chap. xxxii. ver. 7, 8. The instruments of a churl are evil: he deviseth wicked devices to destroy the poor with lying words, even when the needy speeketh right. But the liberal deviseth liberal things and by liberal things shall he stand. It is certainly honesty to do every thing the law requires; but should we throw every poor debtor in prison till he has paid the utmost farthing, hang every malefactor without mercy, exact the penalty of every bond, and the forfeiture of every indenture, this would be downright cruelty, and not honesty: and it is contrary to that general rule, To do to another, that which you would have done unto you. Sometimes necessity makes an honest

honest man a knave; and a rich man an honest man, because he has no occasion to be a knave. The trial of honesty is this. Did you ever want bread, and had your neighbour's loaf in keeping; and would starve, rather than eat it? Were you ever arrested, having in your custody another man's cash, and would rather go to goal, than break it? if so, this indeed may be reckoned honesty. For King Solomon tells us, That a good name is better than life, and is a precious aintment, and which, when a man has once lost, he has nothing worth keeping.

Chap. HL Of Suffering AFFLICTIONS.

AFFLICTIONS are common to all mankind; and whether they proceed from losses, disappointments, or the malice of men, they often bring their advantages along with them: for this she ws man the vanity and deceitfulness of this life, and is an occasion of rectifying our measures, and bringing us to a more modest opinion of ourfelves: it tells us, how necessary divine grace is unto us, when life itself becomes a burthen, and death even desirable: but when the greatest oppression comes upon us. we must have recourse to patience, begging of God to give us that virtue; and the more composed we are under any trouble, the more commendable is our wisdom, and the larger will be our recompense. Let the provoca-tion be what it will, whether from a good-natured and conscientious, or a wicked, perverse, and vexatious man; all this we should take from the over-ruling hand of God as a punishment for our fins. Many times injured innocence may be abufed by false oaths, or the power of wicked, jealous, or malicious men; but we often find it, like the palm, rife the higher, the more it is depressed; while the justice of God is eminently remarkable in punishing those one way or other, who defire to endeavour to procure the downtal of an innocent man: nor does God fail comforting an afflicted person, who with tears and prayers solicits the throne of Heaven for deliverance and protection. David fays, That his foul was full of trouble, and his life drew near unto the grave. But certianly David's afflictions made him eminently remarkable, as particularly when perfued by King Saul, and hunted as a partridge over the mountains. But one thing which stands by innocence, is the love of God; for were we to fuffer difgrace, nay, an ignominious death itself, what confolation does our innocence procure at our latest conflict, our last moments?

Chap. IV. Of the immorality of conversation, and

the vulgar errors of behaviour.

As conversation is a great part in human happiness, so it is a pleasant sight to behold a sweet tempered man, who is always sit for it; to see an air of humour and pleasantness sit ever upon his brow, and even something angelic in his very countenance: whereas if we observe a designing man, we shall find a mark of involuntary sadness break in upon his joy, and a certain insurrection in the soul, the natural concomitant of prossigate principles.

They err very much, who think religion, or a strict morality, discomposes the mind, and renders

to innocent mirth, without such a counterfeir joy as vitious men appear with; and indeed wit is as consistent with religion, as religion is with good manners; nor is there any thing in the limitation of virtue and religion, that should abate the pleasure of this world, but on the contrary rather serves to increase them.

On the other hand, many men, by their own vice and intemperance, disqualify themselves for conversation. Conversation is immoral, where the discourse is indecent, immodest, scandalcus, slanderous, and abusive. How great is their folly, and how much do they expose themselves, when they affront their best friend, even God himself, who

laughs at the fool when his fear cometh?

The great scandal atheistical and and immoral discourse gives to virtue, ought, methinks, to be punished by all good magistrates; make a man once cease to believe a God, and he has nothing left to limit his soul. How congruous is it to good government, that a man shall be punished for drunkenness, and yet have liberty to affront; and even deay the Majesty of heaven? when if, even among men, one gives the lie to a gentleman in company, or perhaps speaks an affronting word, a quarrel will ensue, and a combat, and perhaps murder be the consequence; at the least he will prosecute him at law with the utmost virulence and oppression.

The next thing to be refrained, is obscene discourse, which is the language only of proficients in debauchery, who never repent but in a

K k goal

goal or an hospital; and whose carcases relish no better than their discourse, till the body becomes too nasty for the soul to stay any longer in it.

Nor his false talking to be less avoided; for sying is the sheep's cloathing hung upon the wolf's back; it is the Pharisee's prayer, the whore's buss, the hypocrite's paint, the murderer's smile, the thief's cloak, it is Joabs's embrace, and Judas' kiss; in a word, it is mankind's darling sin, and the devil's distinguishing character. Some add lies to lies till it not only comes to be improbable, but even impossible too; others lie for gain, sport, or for sun. There are other liars, who are personal and malicious; who soment differences, and carry tales from one house to another, in order to gratify there own envious tempers, without any regard or reverence to truth.

Chap. V. Of the present state of religion in the world.

I doubt, indeed, there is much more devotion than religion in the world, more adoration than supplication, and more hypocrify than sincerity: and it is very melancholy to consider, what numbers of people there are furnished with the powers of reason and gifts of nature and yer abandoned to the grossest ignorance and depravity. But it would be uncharitable for us to imagine (as some Papists abounding with too much ill nature, the only scandal to religion, do) that they will certainly be in the state of damnation after this life; for how can we think it consistent with the

to damn those creatures, when he has not furnished them with the light of his gospel? or how can such proud, conceited, and cruel bigots prescribe rules to the justice and mercy of God?

We are told by some people, that the great image which King Nebuchadnezzar set up to be adored by his people, held the representation of the sun its right hand, as the principal object of adoration. But to wave this discourse of Heathens, how many self-contradicting principles are there held among Christians? and how do we doom one another to the devil, while all profess to worship the same Deity, and to expect the same salvation?

When I was at Portugal, there was held at that time the court of justice of the inquisition. All the criminals were carried in procession to the great church, where eight of them were habited in gowns and caps of canvass, whereon the torments of hell were displayed, and they were condemned and burnt for crimes against the Catholic

faith and bleffed virgin.

I am forry to make any reflection upon Christians; but indeed in Italy the Roman religion seems the most cruel and mercenary upon earth: and a very judicious person, who travelled through Italy from Turky, tells us, "That there is only the face and outward pomp of religion there; that the church "protects murderers and assassins, and then deli"vers the civil magistrates over to Satan for doing "justice; interdicts whole kingdoms and shuts up "the churches for want of paying a few ecclesions."

K k 2 assist

As to religion in Poland, they deny Christ to be the Messiah, or that the Messiah was come in the sless. And as to their Protestants, they are the followers if Lælius Socinus, who denied our Saviour's divinity; and have no concern about the

divine inspiration of the Holy Ghost.

In Muscovy their churches are built of wood, and indeed they have but wooden priests, though of the Greek church: they pray as much to St Nicholas, as Papills do to the virgin Mary, for protection in all their difficulties or afflictions.

Romans in believing consubstantiation, instead of transubstantiation; but, like them, they are much pleased with the external gallantry and pomp, more than the true and real practice of it.

In France I found a world of priefts, the fireers every where crouded with them, and the churches full of women; but surely never was a nation to sull of blind guides, so ignorant of religion, and even as void of morals as those people who confess their sins to them.

Does it not feem strange, that while all men own the Divine Being, there should be for many different

different opinions as to the manner of paying him obedience in the Christian church? I know not what reason to assign for this, except it be their

different capacities and faculties.

And indeed, upon this account, we have perceived in all Christian countries what mortal feuds have been about religion: what wars and bloodshed have molested Europe, till the general pacification of the German troubles at the treaty of Westphalia; and fince those times, what persecution in the fame country among the churches of the Lutherans: and should I take a prospect at home, what unhappy divitions are between Christians in this kingdom, about Episcopacy and Presbytery, the church of England men and the diffenters; oppofing one another like St Paul and St Peter, even to the face; that is, they carry on the dispute to the utmost extremity.

It might be a question, why there are such differences in religious points, and why these breaches would be more hot and irreconcileable? All the answer I can give to this, is, that we inquire more concerning the truth of religion; than any other nation in the world; and the anxious concern we have about it, makes us jealous of every opinion, and tenacious of our own: and this is not because we are more surious and rash than other people; but the truth is, we are more concerned about them, and being fensible that the scripture is the great rule of faith, the standard for life and doctrine, we have recourse to it ourselves, without submitting to any pretended infallible judge upon earth.

There

There is another question, pertinent to the former, and that is, What remedy can we apply to this malady; And to this I must negatively answer, Not to be less religious, that we may differ the less. This is striking at the very root of all religious differences; for certainly, were they to be carried on with a peaceable spirit, willing to be informed, our variety of opinions would not have the name of differences; nor should we separate in communion of charity, though we did not agree in several articles of religion.

Nor is there a less useful question to start, namely, Where will our unhappy religious differences end? To which, I hope, I may answer, In Heaven; there all unchristian and unbrotherly differences will find a period; there we shall embrace many a finner, that here we think it a dishonour to converse with; and perceive many a heart we have broken here with censures, reproachings, and revilings, be made whole again by the balm of the same Redeemer's blood, Here we shall perceive there have been other flocks than those of our fold; that those we have excommunicated, have been taken into that fuperior communion; and in a word, that those contradicting notions and principles, which we thought inconsistent with true religion, we shall then find reconcileable to themselves, to one another, and to the fountain of truth. If any man alk me, why our differences cannot be ended on earth; I answer, were we all thoroughly convinced, that then they would be reconciled, we would put an end to them before; but this is impossible to be done

done; for mens certain convictions of truth are not equal to one another, or to the weight or fignificancy of such veracity; so neither can a general effect of this affair be expected on this side of time, on this side of the grave.

Before I conclude this chapter, I shall beg leave to discourse a little of the wonderful excellency of negative religion and negative virtue. The latter fets out, like the Pharifee, with, God, I thank thee; it is a piece of religious pageantry, the hypochrite's hope; and, in a word, it is positive vice: for it is either a mask to deceive others, or a mist to deceive ourselves. A man that is clothed with negatives, thus argues: I am not fuch a drunkard as my landlord, fuch a thief as my tenant, fuch a fwearer as his neighbour: neither am I a cheat, an Atheist, a rakish fellow, or a highwayman: no! I live a fober, regular, retired life: I am a good man, I go to church, God, I thank thee. Now, though a man boasts of his virtue in contradiction to the vices mentioned, yet a person had better have them altogether, than the man bimself; for he is so sull of himself, so perfuaded that he is good and religious enough already, that he has no thoughts of any thing, except it be to pull off his hat to God almighty now and then, and thank him, that he has no occasion for him; and has the vanity to think that his neighbours must imagine well of him too.

The negative man, though he is no drunkard, is yet intoxicated with the pride of his own worth; a good neighbour and peace maker in other families.

families, but a tyrant in his own; appears in church for a show, but never falls upon his knees in his closet; does all his alms before men to be seen of them; eager in duties of the second table, but regardless of the first; appears religious, to be taken notice of by men, but without intercourse or communication between God and his own soul; Pray what is this man? or what comfort is there of the life he lives? he is insensible of faith; repentance, and a Christian mortisted life; in a word, he is perfectly a stranger

to the effential part of religion.

Let us for a while enter into the private and retired part of his conversation: What notions has he of his mispent hours, and of the progress of time to the great center and gulf of life, eternity? does he know how to put a right value on time, or esteem the life-blood of bis foul, as it really is, and act in all the moments of it, as one that must account for them? if then you can form an equality between what he can do, and what he shall receive; less can it be founded upon his negative virtue, or what he has forborn to do; and if neither his negative nor politive piety can be equal to the reward, and to the eternity that reward is to last for, what then is to become of the Pharisee, when he is to be judged by the fincerity of his repentance, and rewarded, according to the infinite grace of God, with a state of bleffedness to an endless eternity.

When the negative man converies with the invisible world, he is filled with as much horror and dread as Felix, when St. Paul reasoned to

him of temperance, righteousness, and of judgement to come; for Felix, though a great phi-losopher, of great power and reverence, was a negative man, and he was made fensible by the apostle, that as a life of virtue and temperance, was its own reward, by giving a healthy body, a clear head, and a composed life; so eternal happiness must proceed from another spring; namely, the infinite unbounded grace of a provoked God, who having erected a righteous tribunal, Jesus Christ would separate tuch as by faith and repentance he had brought home and united to himself by the grace of adoption, and on the foot of his having laid down his life as a ransom for them, had appointed them to salvation, when all the philosophy, temperance and righteousness in the world, besides had been ineffectual. And this, I fay, it was that made Felix, this negative man, tremble.

Chap. VI. Of liftening to the voice of providence.

The magnificent and wife King Solomon bids us cry after knowledge, and lift up our voice for understanding; by which is meant, religious knowledge; for it follows: Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God. By which undoubted y he meant, to inquire after every thing that he has permitted us to know, and not to search into those ways that are unsearchable, and are effectually locked up from our knowledge. Now, as listening to the voice of providence is my present subject, I intend, in the first place, to write to those who own, 1. That there is a God, a first great moving cause

cause of all things, and eternal power, prior, and consequently superior to all created power or being. 2. That this eternal power, which is God, is the sovereign creator and governor of heaven and earth.

To avoid all needless distinctions what persons in the Godhead exercise the creating, and what the governing power, I offer that glorious text, Psal. xxxiii. 6. where the whole Trinity is intitled to the whole creating work; and therefore, in the next place, I shall lay down these two propositions.

I. That the eternal God guides by his providence the whole universe, which was created by his

power.

II. That this providence manifests a particular care over, and concern in the governing and directing man, the most noble creature upon earth.

It is plain, that natural religion proves the first, by intimating the necessity of a providence guiding and governing the world, stom the consequence of the wisdom, justice, prescience, and goodness of the almighty Creator; for otherwise it would be absurd to think, that God should create a world, without any care or providence over it, in guiding the operations of nature, so as to preserve the order of his creation.

Revealed religion gives us a light into the care and concern of his providence, by the climates being made habitable, the creatures subjected and made nourishing, and all vegetative life made medicinal; and all this for the sake of man, who

this: That it is that operation of the power, of the wisdom, justice, and goodness of God, by which he influences, governs, and directs, not only the means, but the events of all things, which concern us in this sublunary world; the sovereignty of which we ought always to reverence obey its motions, observe its dictates, and listen, to its voice. The prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: that is, as I take it, there is a secret providence intimates to us, that some danger threatens, if we strive not to shun it.

The fame day that Sir John Hotham kept out Hull against the royal martyr King Charles I, the same day Sir John Hotham was put to death by the parliament for that very action: the same day that the king himself signed the warrant for the execution of the Earl of Strafford, the same day of the month was he barbarously murdered by the blood-thirsty Oliverian crew: and the same day that King James the Second came to the crewn against the bill of exclusion, the same day he was voted abdicated by the parliament, and the throne silled with King William and Queen Mary.

The voice of fignal deliverances from sudden dangers, is not only a just call to repentance, but a caution against falling into the like danger: but such who are utterly careless of themselves after, shew a lethargy of the worst nature, which seems to me to be a kind of practical atheism, or at least a living in a contempt of heaven, when he receives good at the hand of his Maker, but is unconcerned

from whence it comes, or to thank the bountiful hand that gave it; neither, When he recives evil, does it alter his manner of life, or bring him to any state of humiliation.

We have a remarkable story of two soldiers being condemned to death in Flanders. The general being prevailed upon to spare one of them, ordered them to cast dice upon the drum-head for their lives; the first having thrown two fixes, the fecond fell a-wringing his hands, having fo poor a chance to escape; however, having thrown he was furprized when he also threw other two fixes. The officer appointed to see the execution, ordered them to throw again; they did fo, and each of them threw fives; at which the foldiers that flood round, shouted, and faid neither of them was to die. Upon this the officer acquainted the council of war, who ordered them to throw a third time, when they threw two fours: the general being made acquainted with it, fent for the men, and pardoned them: I love fays he, in fuch extraordinary cases, to listen to the voice of providence.

We read in the holy writings, how God speaks to men, by appearence of angels, or by dreams and visions of the night. As God appeared to Abraham, Lot, and Jacob; so angels have appeared to many in other cases, as to Manoah and his wife, Zechariah, the virgin Mary, and to the apostles; others have been warned in a dream, as King Abimelech, the false prophet Balaam and many others.

It is certainly a very great and noble inquiry. What we shall be after this life? for there is scarc

a doubt, that there is a place referved for the reception of our fouls after death: The doctrine of spirits was long believed before our Saviour's time; for when the disciples of the blessed lefus perceived our Saviour walking on the fea, they where much furprised, as though they had feen a spirit. Nay, in those ages of the world, it was believed that spirits intermeddled in the affairs of mankind; and throughout the Old Teftament I do not find any thing that in the least contradicts it. All the pains and labour that some learned men have taken, to confute the story of the witch of Endor, and the appearance of an old man personating Samuel, cannot make such apparitions inconfistent with nature or religion : and it is plain, that it was either a good or bad spirit, that prophetically told the unfortunate king what should happen the next day; for, faid the spirit, The Lord will deliver thee into the hand of the Philistines; and to-morrow shalt thou and thy fons be with me.

Abundance of strange notions possessed me, when I was in the desolate island; especially of a moonshine night, when every bush seemed a man, and every tree a man on horseback. When I crept into the dismalcave, where the old goat lay expiring, whose articulate groans even resembled those of a man, how was I surprised! my blood chilled in my veins, a cold sweaty dew set on my forehead, my hair stood upright, and my joints, like Belshazzar's knees, struck against one another. And indeed, though I afterwards found what it was, the remains of this surprise did not wear of

for a great while; and I had frequently returns of those vapours on different occasions, and some-

times without any occasion at all.

One night, after having seen some appearance in the air, as I had just lain down in my bed, one of my feet pained me; after that came a numbness, succeeded with a ringling in my blood; when on a fudden I thought fomething alive lay upon me, from my knee to above half my leg. Upon this I flung myself out of bed where I thought the creature lay: but finding nothing, Lord deliver me from an evil spirit, said I, perceiving no living creature in the place with me, but the poor parrot who being frighted, cried out, Hold your tongue, and What's the matter with you? which words, I had taught him, by faying so to him, when he made fuch screaming noises as Idid not like. Lord faid I aloud, furely the devil has been here. Hold your tongue, fays Poll. I then was mad at the bird, and putting on my cloathes, cried, I am terribly frighted. What's the matter with you? fays Poll. You toad, faid I I'll knock your brains out. Hold your tongue, cried he again, and fo fell a-chattering, and calling Robinson Crusoe as he did before. But after I had composed myself, and went, to bed again, I began plainly to see it was a distemper that affected my nerves, and so my terrors vanished at once. to the whible by olding only or

How intelligences are given or received, we do not know; nor are we sensible how they are conveyed from spirits unembodied, to ours that are in life; or on the contrary from us to them: the litter certainly is done without the help of the or-

gans, and the former is conveyed by the underflanding, and the retired faculties of the foul.

The spirits, without the help of voices, converse, and the more particular discoveries of the converse of spirits seem to me as follow; to wit, dreams voices, noises, Impulses, hints, apprehensions in-

voluntary sadness, &c.

Dreams of old were the ways by which God himself was pleased to warn men what services to perform, and what to shun. Joseph was directed of God in a dream to go to Egypt; and so were the wife men warned in a dream to depart into their own country another way, to avoid the fury, of Herod. I am not like those who think dreams are the mere dofings of a delirious head, or the relicks of a day's perplexities or pleasures; but on the contrary, I must beg leave to say, I never mer with any capital mischief in my life, but I had some notice of it by a dream; and had I not been a thoughtless unbelieving creature, I might: have taken many a warning, and avoided many of the evils I afterwards fell into, merely by a total neglect of those dreams.

man and a clergyman, upon the subject of dreams. The first thought no regard should be given unto them; that their communication from the invisible to the visible world was a mere chimera, without any solid soundation. For, 1. said he, if dreams were from the agency of any prescient being, the motives would be more direct, and the discoveries more plain; and not by allegories and emblematic sancies, expressing things imperfect and obscure:

L 1 2 2. Since.

power given to avoid it, it is not likely to proceed from a spirit, but merely fortuitous. 3. That the inconstancy of such notices, in cases equally important, proves they did not proceed from any such agent. 4. That as our most distinct dreams had nothing in them of any significancy, it would be irrational and vain to think that they come from heaven. And, 5. That as men were always thus warned or supplied with notice of good or evil, so all men are not alike supplied with them; and what reason could we give, why one man or one woman should not have the same hints as another?

To all this the clergyman gave answer; 1. That as to the fignification of dreams, and the objections against them, as being dark and doubtful, they are expressed generally by hieroglyphical representations, fimiles, allusions, and figurative emblematic ways, by which means, for want of interpretation, the thing was not understood, and consequently the evil not shunned. 2. That we charge God foolishly, to fay that he has given notice of evil without the power to avoid it; for if any one had not power to avoid the evil, it was no notice to him; and it was want of giving due heed to that notice, that men first neglected themselves, and then charged the judge of all the earth with injustice. 3. That we ought not to find fault with the inconstancy of these notices, but rather with our weak understandings, by pretending dreams were not to be regarded, and negligent when the voice really spoke to us for our good. It is a miftake

take to fay, dreams had no import at all: we might with more reason have said, none that we could perceive the reason of, owing to our blindness and supine negligence, too secure at one time, and too much alarmed at another: fo that the fpirit, which we might be taid to be conversing with in a dream, was constantly and equally kind and careful; but our powers are not always in the same state of action: not equally attentive to, or retentive of the hints that are given. And, 5. To answer the last question, why people are not equally supplied?" This feemed to be no question; for Providence itfelf might have some share in the direction of it, and then that providence might be limited by a fuperior direction: That as to the converse of spirits, he could not call it a flated converse; fuch a thing there was, but why there was so much of it, and no more, was none of his business, and that: no fuch discovery had ever yet been made to mankind. Nor were we to imagine less of waking dreams, trances, visions, noises, hints impulfes, and all the walking testimonies of an invisible world, and of the communication that there is between us and them, which commonly entertains us with our eyes open.

One time my fancy foared on high, to fee what discoveries I could make in those clearer regions. I found that such immense bodies as the sun, stars, planets, and moon in the great circle of the lower heaven, are far from being found in the sludy of nature, on the surface of the earth. Here I saw many things that we can entertain little or no notion of in a state of common life, and the empti-

nels

ness of our notions, that the planets are habitable worlds, that is, created like ours for the subfishence and existance of man and beast, and the preservation of the vegetive and fenfitive life: no, no; this is, I affure you, a world of spirits: for here I faw a clear demonstration of Satan being the prince of the power of the air, keeping his court or camp, with innumerable angels to attend him: but his power is not so great as we imagine, he can tempt us to the crime, but cannot force us to commit it : Humanum est pecare. Neither has the devil power to force the world into a rebellion against beaven, though his legions are employed among favage nations, to fet up their master for a god, who make the heathens either worship him in person for by his representatives, idols and monsters, with the cruel facrifices of human blood. Now, as to the limitations of the devil's power, you must understand, that as there are numbers of evil spirits employed in mischief, so there are numbers of good angels fent from the higher and bleffed abodes to disconcert and oppose their measures; and this every Christian, I hope, believes, when he prays to God, the Father of spirits, to give his angels charge over him while he flumbereth and fleepeth. For if by these preventing powers the slevil was not restrained, the earth would be subjected unto dearth, droughts, and famine; the air infected with noxious fames; and, in a word, mankind would be utterty destroyed, which might oblige our Maker (if I may be allowed the expression) to the necessity of a new Fiar, or else have no more-creatures to honour and worthip him. As

As the devil never wanted infinuators, I shall observe, that I learned a way how to make a man dream of what I pleased. For instance, let us suppose one to be found asleep; let another lay his mouth ciose to his ear, and whisper any thing to foftly as not to awake him, the fleeping man shall dream of what has been fo whispered in his ear; nay, I can affure you, those infinuating devils, can do this even when we are awake, which I call impulses of the mind: for from whence, but from these infinuators, come our causeless passions, involuntary wickedness, or finfull desires? Who elfe forms ideas in the mind of man, when he is afleep. or prefents terrible or beautiful figures to his fancy? Mr Milton represents the Devil tempting Eve in the shape of a toad, lying just at her ear, when in her bower the lay fast asleep; and brings in Eve telling Adam what an uneafy night's rest she had, and relating her dream to him. And likewise I beleive that good spirits have the same intercourse with us, in warning us against those things that are evil, and prompting us to that which is good.

Were we to have the eyes of our fouls opened; through the eyes of our bodies, we should see this very immediate region of air which we breathe in, thronged with spirits now invisible, and which otherwise would be the most terrible: we should view the secret transactions of those messengers who are employed when the parting soul takes its leave of the reluctant body, and perhaps see things nature would shrink back from with the utmost terror and amzement. In a word, the cur-

tain of providence for the disposition of things here, and the curtain of judgment for the determination of the state of souls hereafter, would be alike drawn back; and what heart could support here its future state in life, much less that of its suture state after life, even good or bad?

A gentleman of my acquaintance, being about feven miles distant from London, a friend that came to dine with him, folicited him to go to the city. What, said the gentleman, is there any occasion for me? No, Sir said the other, nothing at all, except the enjoyment of your good company; and so gave over importuning him. Just then a strong impulse of mind urged the gentleman, and purfued him like a voice, with, Go to London, Go to London. Hark ye, fays he to his friend, is all well at London? Am I wanted there? Or did you ask me to go with you on any particular account? Are all my family well? Yes, indeed, Sir, faid he, I perceived them all very hearty; and I did not ask you to go to London upon any particular account whatsoever, except it was for for the fake of your good company. Again he put off his resolution; but still the impulse suggested to him, Go to London; and at length he did fo. When he came there, he found a letter and messenger had been there to seek him, and to tell him of a particular business, which was first and last above a thousand pounds to him, and which might have inevitably been loft, had he not gone to London that night

I know a person who had so strong an impressi-

on upon her mind, that the house she was in would be burnt that very night, that she could not fleep; the impulse she had upon her mind preffed her not to go to bed, which, however, she had got over, and went to bed; but was so terrified with the thought that run in her mind, that the house would be burnt, that the could not go to fleep; but communicating her apprehensions to another in the family, they were both in such a fright, that they applied themselves to search from the top of the house to the bottom, and to see every fire and candle fafe out, so that, as they all faid, it was impossible any thing could happen in the house, and they fent to the neighbours on both fides to do the like. Thus far they did well; but had she obeyed the hint which preffed upon her strangely not to go to bed, she had done much better; for the fire was actually kindled at that very time, though not broken out. About an hour after the whole family was in bed, the house just over the way, directly opposite, was all in flames, and the wind, which was very high, blowing the slame upon the house this gentlewoman lived in, so filled it with smoke and fire, in a few moments, the ftreet being narrow, that they had no air to breathe, or time to do any thing, but jump out of their beds, and fave their lives. Had she obeyed the hint given, and not gone to bed, she might have faved feveral things; but the few moments she had spared to her, were but just sufficient to leap out of bed, put some cloathes on, and get down stairs, for the house was on fire in half a quarter of an hour.

While I am mentioning these things, methinks it is very hard, that we should obey the whispers of evil spirits, and not much rather receive the notices which good ones are pleased to give. We never perceive the missortune of this, but when in real danger: and then and we cry, My mind missave me when I was going about it. but if so, why did you slight the caution? Why not listen to it as to a voice? and then there had been no reason to

make this complaint.

I remember about 14 or 15 years ago (as to time I cannot be very politive there was a young clergyman in the city of Dublin in Ireland, who dreamed a very uncommon dream, That a gentleman had killed his wife, a relation of his, by stabbing ber in feveral places; the fright of this awaked him, but finding it a dream, he composed himself again to fleep, when he dreamed a fecond time the fame dream. This made him a little uneafy; but thinking it proceeded from the impression made on his mind by the former, he went to fleep, again, and dreamed the same dream a third time allo. So troubled was he at this, that he arole, and knocked at his mother's chamber, told his concern, and his apprehensions that all were not right at his relation's house. Dear son, says the good old gentlewoman, do not mind these foolish dreams: and and I very much wonder, that you, being a perfon in holy orders, should have regard to such illusions. Upon this he went to bed again, fell afleep, and dreamed a fourth time as before. And then indeed he put on his night-gown, and went to Smithfield, the place where his relation dwelt.

dwelt. Here it was, alas! he perceived his dream too fadly fulfilled, by feeing his relation, the young lady, big with child, who was a Protestant, stabbed in seven places, by her barbarous husband Mr Eustace, a violent Papist, only for some discourses of religion that happened the day before. After the wretch had stabbed her in three places, he went to make his escape out at a window; but the cried out, My dear! don't leave me, come back, and I shall be well again. At which he returned in a hellish rage, and gave her four wounds more; when even in this condition, rifing from her bed, the wrapped herfelf in her nightgown, and went to the Lord Bishop of Rapho's chamber-door (the bishop lodging at: that time in the house), My Lord, said she, O my Lord, make haste unto me; but as soon as his Lordship came, she expired in his arms, resigning her precious foul into the hands of almighty God. The cruel wretch her husband was shot by the pursuers, too good a death for one who deferved the gibbet; and the lady was univerfally lamented by all tender and religious people. And this tragical relation I have mentioned upon the account of that implufe or dream that the clergyman had at the fatal time of the bloody action. Observations on Apparitions.

I once heard of a man that would allow the reality of apparitions, but laid it all upon the devil, thinking that the fouls of men departed, are good men, did never appear. To this very man something did appear; he said, he saw the shape of an ancient man pass by him in the dusk, who,

holding

holding up his hand in a threatening posture, cried out, O wicked man, repent, repent. Terrified with this apparition, he consulted several friends, who advised him to take the advice. But, after all it was not an apparition, but a grave and pious gentleman, who met him by mere accident, and had been sensible of his wickedness; and who never undeceived him, lest it should hinder his reformation. Were we always willing to make good use of Satan's real appearances, I know not but it would go a great way to banish him from the visible world; for I am very positive, he would seldom visit us, if he thought his coming would do us any good; but so absolutely is he at the command of heaven, that he must go, even to do the work he abhors. 5 AP 66 Some people make a very ill use of the general no-

tion, that there are no apparitions nor spirits at all: which is worse than those who fancy they fee them upon every occasion: for those carry their notions farther, to annihilate the devil, and believe nothing about him, neither of one kind or other: the next step they come to, is to conclude, There is no God, and fo atheism takes its rife in the same sink, with a carelessness about futurity. But there is no occasion to enter upon an argument to prove the being of the Almighty. What I have faid, I hope will not millead any person, or be a means whereby they may delude themselves: for I have spoken of, these things with the utmost seriousness of mind, and with a fincere and ardent defire for the general good and benefit of the world.

FINIS.

